

EARLY HISTORY
OF
GRIMES COUNTY

BLAIR

EARLY HISTORY
of
GRIMES COUNTY



By
E. L. BLAIR, M.A.
Superintendent of Schools, Trinity, Texas

Copyright, 1930
E. L. BLAIR

DEDICATION

This book is affectionately dedicated to my mother

MRS. SALLIE (BLAIR) ROGERS

Preface

It has been the aim of the writer to gather and preserve all available data concerning the sixty-four persons who, as members of Stephen F. Austin's several colonial enterprises, secured land grants in the section of Texas territory that now constitutes Grimes county. By far the greater part of this essay will therefore be biographical in nature. Many of the persons dealt with are unknown to history. Their lives, for the most part, were absorbed in local and domestic affairs. Some few of them, however, were prominent in the political life of the period. Others offered, and some gave, their lives for the freedom of Texas when the revolutionary struggle came. They all contributed to the establishment of Texas as an Anglo-American state. It is hoped that this effort to record their services and trace their descendants, will prove of interest and value to students of Texas history and to the many hundreds of Texans in whose veins today flows the blood of these sixty-four pioneers. The writer is fully conscious of the fact that many of Grimes county's most prominent families do not come within the scope of this work. An effort has been made to give some recognition to many of such families in footnotes. Concerning many of these families the writer has on hand much interesting information, and it is hoped that it will be possible to incorporate it in a later essay. The writer is not unmindful of the probability that many minor errors will be found. Some such are inevitable in a work of this kind because of the great variety of sources from which the data is drawn. An earnest effort has been made, however, to distinguish clearly what has been given as facts from what is based upon rumor. Very scant information is given about several of the sixty-four original grantees. In some such instances it has been impossible to locate anyone who could

give the information desired; in some few cases, however, this scarcity is due to the lack of interest, or co-operation, on the part of people who could have given assistance. On the whole the writer has received the most whole-hearted co-operation and assistance from the people of Grimes county and elsewhere. Especially grateful is the writer to the following persons: Judge James Green McDonald of Anderson, Texas; Mr. L. H. Barry of Navasota, Texas; Mrs. W. E. Blackshear of Navasota, Texas; Mr. W. T. Neblett of Anderson, Texas; the late Mrs. Margaret Harrison of Bedias, Texas; Robert E. Greenwood, Junior, of Navasota, Texas; Superintendent L. G. Andrews of Navasota, Texas; Miss Harriet Smither of the State Library at Austin, Texas; Mr. E. W. Winkler, librarian of the University of Texas; and Honorable Daniel E. Garrett, Congressman from the Eighth District of Texas. Most of all the writer is indebted to Dr. E. C. Barker for his patience and kindly assistance.

By way of an approach to the biographical study of the original grantees, there is given a brief historical survey in which an attempt has been made to trace the various steps in the organization of the territory and government of Texas with especial attention always given to that unit of which the present territory of Grimes county constituted a part.

CONTENTS

PART I. GOVERNMENT, POLITICAL ORGANIZATIONS AND SUBDIVISIONS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. Political Organizations, 1821-1836.....	11
Population of Texas about 1821.....	11
Political Divisions of Texas about 1821.....	12
Local Government; Executive.....	15
Legislative	15
The Ayuntamiento.....	15
Judiciary	17
Manner of Selecting Jurors.....	18
Militia	18
II. Origin, Organization, and Subdivision of Washington Municipality....	21
Origin and Organization of Washington Municipality.....	21
Creation of Montgomery County.....	26
Creation of Grimes County.....	28
Creation of Madison County.....	30
Creation of Waller County.....	31

PART II. INDIAN POPULATION OF GRIMES COUNTY TERRITORY. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES OF THE SIXTY-FOUR ORIGINAL GRANTEES IN GRIMES COUNTY

III. Indian Population of Grimes County and Its Vicinity.....	33
Bedias	33
Kickapoos	36
Cushattees	36
Relations Between Indians and Whites.....	37
Local Indian Stories as Told by Pioneer Settlers.....	38
Indians Visit the T. P. Plaster Home.....	38

CHAPTER	PAGE
Indians Kill Mrs. Taylor.....	39
Indians Kill Kennard's Calves.....	41
Methods of Precaution Against Indian Night Attacks.....	41
Indians Kill Man on Wallace Prairie.....	42
Indian Expedition of 1839.....	42
Military Preparedness against Indians.....	43
Indians Removed from Grimes County.....	44
IV. Biographical Sketches of the Sixty-four Original Grantees in Grimes County	45
Robert Armour.....	45
Daniel Arnold.....	46
Benjamin Babbitt.....	47
James Bell.....	47
John S. Black.....	48
Marcus D. Black.....	52
John Bowman.....	53
Samuel Bowman.....	55
Alexander Brown.....	55
William Burney.....	56
Cyrus Campbell.....	56
John C. Conner.....	57
James Cox.....	60
Hanna Cornaugh.....	61
William FitzGibbons.....	61
Samuel Fulton.....	62
Claiborne Garrett.....	62
Heirs of J. Gillett.....	63
Franklin Jarvis Greenwood.....	63

CONTENTS

IX

CHAPTER	PAGE
Joel Greenwood.....	71
Darius Gregg.....	72
Jesse Grimes.....	72
Jared E. Groce.....	76
Leonard W. Groce.....	84
Joshua Hadley.....	90
John Harris.....	102
Jacob Hays.....	103
Francis Holland.....	104
William Holland.....	106
James Holland.....	107
Patrick C. Jack.....	108
Isaac Jackson.....	114
Timothy Jones.....	116
Anthony D. Kennard.....	116
John Landrum.....	125
William Laughlin.....	127
Thomas McDowell.....	127
M. McDowell.....	128
William McGuffin.....	128
William McIntire.....	129
Margaret McIntire.....	129
Daniel B. McMahan.....	132
William Montgomery.....	132
James W. Moore.....	134
John Moore.....	135
Jesse B. McNealy.....	139

CHAPTER	PAGE
Jesse W. Pankey.....	139
John Payne.....	139
John Peterson.....	140
Obediah Pitts.....	140
Robert Ray.....	142
Andrew Rea.....	143
Ignacius Simms.....	143
William Townsend.....	145
Daniel Tyler.....	146
Allen Vince.....	147
Tandy Walker.....	147
Caleb Wallace.....	154
James Wallace.....	155
Dudley J. White.....	155
James Whitesides.....	157
John J. Whitesides.....	161
Asa Yeamans.....	162
Abraham Zuber.....	163

APPENDIX

1. A List of the Sixty-four Persons Who Were Granted Land by the Government of Mexico in What Is Now Grimes County, Showing Amount of Land Granted and the Date of Their Patent.....	175
2. Map Showing the Location of the Sixty-four Members of Austin's Colony Who Settled in What Is Now Grimes County.....	178
3. Muster Roll of Company G, Hood's Texas Brigade.....	180
4. Muster Rolls of Other Companies Organized in Grimes County During the Civil War.....	189
5. Incomplete List of Grimes County Officials, 1846-1929.....	196
6. Texas Veterans From Grimes County Vicinity.....	215
7. Correspondence on the Origin and Importance of the "Wheatless" Movement, 1918.....	217

PART I

Chapter I

POLITICAL ORGANIZATIONS, 1821-1836

In 1800, after more than two hundred years of Spanish rule, aside from the Indian population, there were to be found only three struggling villages in what is today Texas. These settlements were around what is now Nacogdoches, Goliad, and San Antonio. Even as late as 1821, the population of Texas, aside from Indians, was only four thousand souls. Of these, there was not one settlement between the Colorado and Trinity rivers.¹ This vast, fertile region continued to be untouched until, in 1821, Stephen F. Austin's first colony of three hundred families began to establish themselves therein.² With the realization of Mexican Independence in 1821 and the accompanying reorganization, the Spanish province of Texas with two other provinces (New Leon and Coahuila) was constituted into what was designated "the Internal States of the East."³ The province of Texas had already been divided into two alcalde districts, namely, Colorado and Brazos, by Governor Jose Felix Trespalacios.⁴ A somewhat different organization was made a few months later when the new Federal constitution (dated October 4, 1824) created the new state of Coahuila and Texas with the capital first at Saltillo,

¹Barker, Potts, and Ramsdell, *A School History of Texas*, 61-63.

²Austin's Map of Texas, 1822, as published in Barker's *Life of Stephen F. Austin* opposite page 52, shows no other settlement.

³Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 61.

⁴*Ibid.*, 15.

later at Monclova.⁵ In January, 1825, the name of the District of Brazos was changed by proclamation of Stephen F. Austin to Bravo, in honor of General Nicolas Bravo, a patriot who was then Vice-President of the Mexican Republic.⁶ The constitution of the state of Coahuila and Texas (1827) provided that the new state should be divided into three departments, namely: Saltillo, Monclova, and Bexar. The latter embraced all the territory that had formerly been the province of Texas and formed one sole district.⁷ Four years later (1831) the department of Bexar was divided into two districts with the dividing line as follows:⁸

“Commencing at Point Bolivar on Galveston Bay; thence running northwesterly to strike between the San Jacinto and Trinity rivers, following the dividing ridge between the said rivers to the headwaters of the San Jacinto; thence following the dividing ridge between the Brazos and the Trinity to the headwaters of the latter, and terminating north of the source of the said Trinity upon the Red river.”

¶In 1833 this line was re-defined, thus:⁹

“The dividing line . . . shall commence at the expanse of water formed by the Trinity and San Jacinto rivers and continue along the latter to the headwaters thereof; thence following the line of Austin’s colony, and by way of the dividing ridge that separates the Brazos and Trinity rivers, to the headwaters of the latter, terminating north of the source of said river upon the Red river.”

The territory situated east of this line was designated the District of Nacogdoches with the town of Nacogdoches as

⁵Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 73.

⁶Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1009.

⁷Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 424.

⁸*Ibid.*, 281.

⁹*Ibid.*, 335.

capital. This arrangement continued until March 18, 1834, when by a new decree (No. 270) the territory of Texas was subdivided into three departments, namely: Bexar, Brazos, and Nacogdoches. Brazos was a new department, having been cut out of the old District of Bexar with boundaries as follows:¹⁰

"The dividing line . . . shall commence at the mouth of the La Vaca river, and ascending said river to the southern limit of the former colony of Green de Witt [Dewitt]; thence leaving said river and following said boundary westward until it crosses the river Guadalupe; thence, taking a northwesterly direction, and following the western boundary of the aforesaid colony to the road leading between Nacogdoches and Bexar; thence north, and terminating on the Red river."

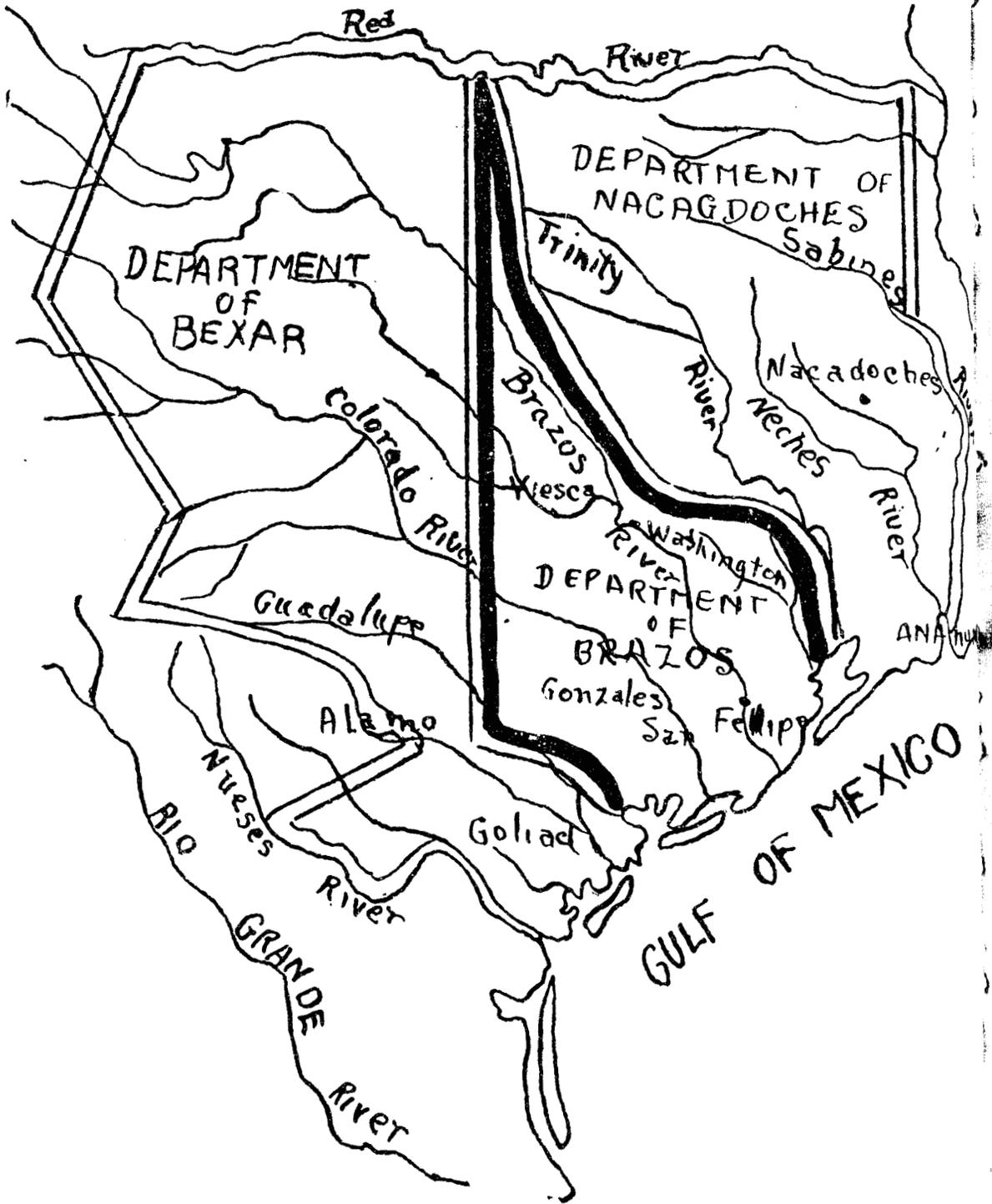
The map given on the following page shows these three departments.¹¹ The town of San Felipe de Austin was designated as the capital of the new department of Brazos.¹² These three Texas departments were subdivided into municipalities, of which at the outbreak of the revolution in 1836, there were eighteen, namely: Austin, Bexar, Brazoria, Goliad, Gonzales, Matagorda, Mina (afterward called Bastrop), Nacogdoches, San Augustine, San Patricio, Harrisburg, Jasper (formerly called Bevil), Liberty, Milam (formerly called Viesca), Refugio, Shelby (or Teneha), Victoria, and Washington.¹³

¹⁰Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 335. The brackets are by the writer.

¹¹The map given here is a partial copy of a similar map published by Fulmore in his *History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 126. The drawing was done for the writer by Mr. Frank Purvis of Navasota, Texas.

¹²Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 355.

¹³Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 278. There is some doubt as to the status of Harrisburg, Jasper, Liberty, Milam, Refugio, Shelby, Victoria, and Washington. It may be that they, or some of them were still only comisario districts. Fulmore listed them all as municipalities. The writer has not been able to verify this statement. Dr. E. C. Barker, of the University of Texas, is of the opinion that they were not municipalities, but were well organized local units.



TEXAS IN 1835

According to Fulmore, in his *History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, five additional municipalities were created by the provisional council of 1835, namely: Colorado, Jackson, Jefferson, Red River, and Sabine.

Local Government: Executive.—The executive power in each of the departments of Coahuila and Texas (1827–1836) was vested in a political chief who was appointed by the governor of the state from a list of three nominated by the state council.¹⁴ His salary in the Texas departments was eight hundred dollars per year with an allowance of four hundred dollars for expenses.¹⁵ Under the political chief there was supposed to be a district sheriff for each of the districts, appointed by the superior judge of that department. Each district sheriff was to be assisted by a subaltern sheriff of which there was to be one in each municipality. There was to be also a constable in each comisario district.¹⁶ It is not clear, however, that the system thus provided by law was carried out in actual practice.

Legislative.—The legislative power of the state of Coahuila and Texas was, in 1834, vested in a unicameral house in which each Texas department was represented by one deputy and one substitute deputy elected by district electoral assemblies, the members of such assemblies having been elected by popular vote from the municipal districts into which the departments were divided.¹⁷

The Ayuntamiento.—The real unit of local government was the ayuntamiento. There was one in each municipality. It was composed of *alcaldes*, *rigidores*, and a *sindico*. The number of these officers varied somewhat, being based upon

¹⁴Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 444.

¹⁵*Ibid.*, 356.

¹⁶*Ibid.*, 385.

¹⁷*Ibid.*, 356.

the population of the municipality.¹⁸ In municipalities containing a population of less than five thousand, there was one alcalde who served as president of the ayuntamiento. With him were two regidores and one sindico procurador. In municipalities where the population exceeded this number, two more regidores were added.¹⁹ In those towns where ayuntamientos could not be established and which were too far distant to be incorporated under the jurisdiction of another ayuntamiento, local administrative affairs were administered by a comisario and a sindico procurador; such officers being chosen by the electoral junta of the district to which the community belonged.²⁰ To be qualified to serve as a member of an ayuntamiento one had to be at least twenty-five years of age, or twenty-one years of age and married. He must have been for three years a resident in the municipality for which he was to serve, and one year immediately preceding election. Members of ayuntamientos were required to have some capital or trade whereby to subsist and be able to read and write. The tenure of an alcalde was one year. One-half of the regidores were to be replaced every year and likewise with the sindicos except in instances where there was only one, then he was to be replaced annually. Members of ayuntamientos were elected by municipal assemblies held in the same manner as in the election of deputies to the state congress. The appointment could not be declined. In case of vacancy by death or other causes, the person receiving the next highest number of votes in that respective list succeeded to the office.²¹ The ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin, the first in the Anglo-American settlement, was installed on

¹⁸Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 429-431.

¹⁹*Ibid.*, 347.

²⁰*Ibid.*, 446.

²¹*Ibid.*, 446.

February 12, 1828. The powers and duties of ayuntamientos were defined by decree number thirty-seven of the Laws of Coahuila and Texas.²²

Judiciary.—In 1834 Texas constituted one judicial circuit and the superior court was known as the "Superior Judicial Court of Texas." This circuit was subdivided into three judicial districts, they being identical with the three administrative departments, namely: Brazos, Bexar, and Nacogdoches.²³ The superior court was by law composed of one superior judge, one secretary, and one sheriff. There was such a court in each of the three judicial districts. In criminal cases there was added one prosecuting attorney and a jury of twelve men. The opinion of eight jurors would convict. A judge was required to be at least twenty-five years of age and a lawyer by profession. Judges were appointed by the state congress on the nomination of the governor and drew a salary of three thousand dollars per year. A superior judge could be removed from office only for causes legally manifested and proved.²⁴ Court was to be held every three months in each of the three districts as follows: in Bexar, beginning on the first Monday in January, April, and August; in Brazos, beginning on the first Monday in February, May, and September; in Nacogdoches, beginning on the first Monday in March, June, and October.²⁵ For the trial of civil cases there was in every municipality a tribunal composed of a judge and a subaltern sheriff. The latter officer was elected in the same manner as the alcaldes. In addition to the courts named above, there was in each commissary district a comisario and

²²Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXI, 299-301. Sections of decree number thirty-seven are reprinted by Barker in footnote.

²³Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I. 365.

²⁴*Ibid.*, 365-366.

²⁵*Ibid.*, 366.

a constable to execute his orders. These constables were required to have the same qualifications as the comisarios and were elected in the same manner and at the same time.²⁶

Manner of Selecting Jurors.—Both civil and criminal cases were tried before a jury of twelve men, the verdict of eight of whom would convict. These jurors were selected in the following manner: Each comisario, at the beginning of the year, furnished his ayuntamiento with a list of names of all citizens in his jurisdiction who were qualified to serve as jurors. These names, each written on individual slips, were stored in boxes, there being one box for each comisario district. During the month prior to the opening session of court, the secretary, in the presence of the ayuntamiento, drew from each box a name until he had thus drawn thirty-six names. The names thus drawn were then placed in a separate box and a list of them was furnished the sheriff for citation.²⁷ The selection for jurors in criminal cases was made in much the same manner, except that here the unit was the municipality rather than the comisario district. Each municipal ayuntamiento was required to remit each year to the ayuntamiento at the capital a list of the qualified jurors in their respective municipalities. Such names were written separately on slips and stored in boxes, there being one box for each municipality. The secretary of the ayuntamiento at the capital drew from each box a number of names which multiplied by the number of municipalities in that judicial district would produce a result not less than thirty-six. A list of the names thus drawn was then furnished the subaltern sheriffs that they might cite those citizens to appear at the capital in due time.²⁸

Militia.—The civic military force of the state of Coahuila

²⁶Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 365.

²⁷*Ibid.*, 365.

²⁸*Ibid.*, 366.

and Texas was made up of a corps of militia organized in each town.²⁹ Four companies were organized in the municipality of Austin, March 21, 1829. Among the officers are found the names of several men then residing in the vicinity of the present county of Grimes. In the First Company appears the following officers who then held land in what is now Grimes county: Jesse Grimes, lieutenant; Leonard W. Groce, sub-lieutenant; and Francis Holland, second sergeant. The name of John Bowman appears in connection with the Fourth Company. He is listed as lieutenant but the records fail to show whether he qualified.³⁰

²⁹Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 451.

³⁰Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXI, 408-409. For additional information concerning these men see Chapter Four of this thesis.

Chapter II

ORIGIN, ORGANIZATION, AND SUBDIVISION OF WASHINGTON MUNICIPALITY

Origin and Organization of Washington Municipality.—According to the data the writer has been able to obtain, the municipality of Washington was never officially established by the Mexican government. It came into existence after the meeting of the Convention of October, 1832, and before the meeting of the Consultation, October, 1835. This is evident from the fact that while no mention is made of a Washington municipality in the reports of the proceedings of the Convention of 1832, in the record of the proceedings of the Consultation (October, 1835) we find Washington listed as a separate municipality. Among her delegates, in 1835, appears the name of Jesse Grimes, who, in 1832, represented the municipality of Viesca.³¹ The municipality of Viesca had been created November 1, 1830; it having been cut from the precinct of Bastrop. Viesca included a large part of the territory east of the Brazos river which afterward formed a part of Washington municipality.³² Among the delegates from the municipality of Viesca at the Convention of October, 1832, are found the names of three men known to have resided in what later became Grimes county, namely: Joshua

³¹Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 496 and 544.

³²Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXII, 357. The precinct of Viesca was created November 1, 1830, with metes and bounds as follows:

"Beginning at the crossing of the Cushatte road on the east or left bank of the Brazos, thence up in a direct line of the Atascosito road at a point on the said road which shall be four leagues from the Brazos river, thence along said road to the divide between the San Jacinto and Trinity rivers, thence following said divide northwardly to the San Antonio road, thence along said road to the Brazos river, thence following the meanderings of said river down to the place of beginning."

Hadley, Jared E. Groce, and Jesse Grimes.³³ Some other territory east of the Brazos river (in addition to that part which formerly formed a part of the municipality of Viesca) afterward to constitute a part of Washington municipality, was at this time (1830) included in the precinct of San Jacinto, which then included all settlements on the waters of the San Jacinto river below the Atascosita road.³⁴ The writer, in his efforts to determine the date of the creation of Washington municipality, finds that a petition, dated July 2, 1835, and addressed to the political chief of the department of Brazos (at that time James B. Miller) explains that a similar petition had been presented the year before and had been approved by the ayuntamiento at San Felipe de Austin but for some reason was never acted upon by the state congress of that year. The petition of July 2, 1835, prayed the political chief on his own authority to order the organization of the new municipality. The following names were signed to this petition: John P. Cloes (Cole), James Whitesides, Shubael Marsh, John J. Wynche, Epps D. Payne, Asa Hoxey, John Newell (?), James Clark, Baldon (?) Robinson, M. Cummings, J. G. Wilkinson, William W. Hawkins, Jesse B. Atkinson, John H. Allcorn, John B. Thompson, James G. Swisher, John Graham (?), Thos. G. (?) Allen, John G. Conner, W. A. Hall, J. J. Allcorn (?), William H. Miller, Francis G. Clampitt (?), E. D. Jackson, (?) Soop, William H. Hill, William Lewis (?), Ashley R. Stevens (?), E. G. Evitt (?), James Moore, J. B. Chanie (?), Elijah Alcorn, G. W. Barnett, John F. Guthrie, D. T. A. Thomson, Alfred M. Cooper, Horatio Chriesman, Stephen R. Roberts, Hiram Beales, and

³³Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 479.

³⁴Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXI, 415.

Thomas Dillard.³⁵ James B. Miller seems to have done what the petitioners requested for he transmitted a letter to his successor (Wyly Martin), dated July 19, 1835, in which he makes the following statement:

"I have permitted the Jurisdiction of Washington to organize provisionally every man in the jurisdiction has signed a petition requesting said organization as their territory is extensive and this point is too far, their petition passed through this ayuntamiento to the Govt and was not acted upon by the Govt. last session, which causes great dissatisfaction, as soon as the Govt was again organized I intended to report them as in an organized condition and pray the Govt to legalize their proceedings as every man has signed this petition for the provissional organization no man can plead to the jurisdiction of the courts. . . ."

The election of officers for the new municipality of Washington was held on Saturday, July 18, 1835, and the following officers were elected: alcalde, Joshua Hadley; regidores, Jesse Grimes and Asa Mitchell; sindico procurador, A. C. Reynolds; sheriff, John W. Hall. On the following page is a copy of the recapitulation of the votes as reported by Thos. S. Saul, secretary.³⁶ The new ayuntamiento nominated James B. Miller for appointment by the political chief as judge in the

³⁵Winkler, "Documents Relating to the Municipality of Washington," *Quarterly*, X, 86-87. Another copy of the same petition had the following names thereon: J. M. Splan, David Trast, S. Moris, J. H. Wood, Robert J. Clow, H. J. Williamson, M. T. Martin, James Lynch, Sam R. Miller, Bethel Morris, John Lott, Thos. S. Saul, Moses Evans, J. W. Simpson, Wm. Copenhagen, Ches. J. Young, J. F. Q. Walkerterson (?), Lewis Jones, Samuel Henry (or Herney), James Gray, Noah T. (?) Byars, James Balantine, Peter M. Mercer, Isaac Connelly, and Wm. C. Jones. The question marks were copied from the article cited above. It is significant that the names of such men as Jared E. Groce, Jesse Grimes, Joshua Hadley, and other settlers on the east side of the Brazos, are not found on either list. It appears that there must have been other copies, or that the petition was hastily gotten up by the citizens of the town of Washington.

³⁶*Ibid.*, 98: The table given on the opposite page was published by Winkler.

new municipality, and at the same time suggested Moses Cummings, James Hall, Senior, Shubael Marsh, and S. R. Roberts as supernumeraries. Record of this action is found in a note dated at Washington, July 28, 1835, and signed by Joshua Hadley.³⁷ In October, 1835, Washington municipality was represented in the Consultation by five men, namely: Asa Mitchell, E. Collard, Asa Hoxey, Phillip Coe, and Jesse Grimes.³⁸ Of these, it is known that Jesse Grimes then resided within the limits of the present county of Grimes.³⁹ These men took an active part in the work of the Consultation. Asa Mitchell served on the committee that drafted the declaration setting forth the causes that forced the Texans to take up arms and the objects for which they fought.⁴⁰ Among the signers of the Declaration of Independence are found the names of two men, namely: Benjamin Briggs Goodrich and Jesse Grimes, both of whom had their residence in what is now Grimes county.⁴¹ In the General Council that followed the Consultation the municipality of Washington was represented by Jesse Grimes.⁴² In the Convention of March, 1836, it is found that two of the four delegates from Washington municipality were residents of what is now Grimes county, they being Jesse Grimes and B. B. Goodrich, both of whom signed the Constitution of the Republic of Texas.⁴³ The Constitution of the Republic of Texas erected the municipality of Washington into Washington county and provided that it should be represented in the

³⁷Winkler, "Documents Relating to the Municipality of Washington," *Quarterly*, X, 100.

³⁸Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 544.

³⁹*Ibid.*, 1066; and *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

⁴⁰Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 514.

⁴¹*Ibid.*, 1066; and *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

⁴²Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 534.

⁴³*Ibid.*, 824 and 1084-1085. The other two delegates were S. Swisher and G. W. Barnett.

Congress of the Republic by one senator and two representatives.⁴⁴ The new county of Washington then contained territory since formed into nine counties. The diagram on the following page shows these nine counties and indicates the process of subdivision that resulted in their creation.⁴⁵

Creation of Montgomery County.—The territory later to become Grimes county continued to form a part of Washington county until the creation of the new county of Montgomery by an act of the Congress of the Republic of Texas, December 14, 1837. This act provided that the new county should include all of what had been Washington county east of the Brazos river, and appointed the following men as commissioners with power to select a proper place for the county seat and to purchase land for the same: James Mitchell, Pleasant Grey, William Robinson, Elijah Collard, Charles Barnett, Joseph L. Bennett, B. B. Goodrich, D. D. Dunham, and Henry Fanthorp. The new county was entitled to one representative in Congress, and with Washington county, constituted one senatorial district.⁴⁶ Its boundaries were defined by the Congress of the Republic of Texas (May 24, 1838) with metes and bounds as follows:⁴⁷

“Beginning at a point on the east side of the Navasota river, where the San Antonio road crosses the same; thence eastwardly with said road to the Trinity river; thence down said river to the boundary line of the county of Liberty; thence west and south with the boundary line of the county of Harrisburg; thence west with

⁴⁴Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, 1078, and Winkler, “Documents Relating to Washington Municipality,” *Quarterly*, X, 96.

⁴⁵The diagram was taken from Fulmore’s *History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 288. The information is incomplete, but is given just as it was printed by Fulmore. The county now known as Brazos was formerly called “Navasota.” The name having changed to Brazos, January 28, 1842. (Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, II, 745.)

⁴⁶Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 1375–1376.

⁴⁷*Ibid.*, 1518.

Derivatives	Created	Organized	Area	County Seat
Municipality of Washington				
Washington	3-17-36	'37	568	Brenham
Brazos				
Burleson				
Lee				
Montgomery	12-14-37	'37	1064	Conroe
Grimes	4-6-46	7-15-46	*770	Anderson
Madison				
Walker	4-6-46	7-13-46	754	Huntsville
Walker				
Madison				
San Jacinto				
San Jacinto				

*Records destroyed before 1898.
 Fulmore, *History of Texas as Told in County Names*, p. 288.

the boundary line of said county to the county of Austin; thence with said county line to the Brazos river; thence with said river to the mouth of the Navasota; thence up the Navasota to the place of beginning.”

The county seat for the new county of Montgomery was located on a hill somewhat south of the old town of Montgomery, the land for the site being donated by William Sheppard. He gave one hundred acres, of which the commissioners in turn deeded ninety-six and one-half acres to James McCown (April 3, 1843) in payment for the construction of a court house on the remaining three and one-half acres. The first court house was a one-story log building. Sale of lots in the new town was advertised in the *Texas Telegraph*.⁴⁸

Creation of Grimes County.—Grimes county was created in 1846 by the First Legislature of the state of Texas as a result of a petition from the people of western Montgomery county praying for separation and the formation of a new county. The petition embraced a request that the new county be named “Grimes,” in honor of Jesse Grimes who was at that time serving as senator from Montgomery county.⁴⁹ The petition was granted and an act was passed, April 6, 1846, creating the new county of Grimes with metes and bounds as follows:⁵⁰

“Beginning at the southwest corner of the county of Walker; thence in a southwardly direction to the northeast corner of a league of land granted to W. Montgomery; thence to the southeast

⁴⁸Anna L. Davis, “Old Montgomery,” *Dallas Morning News* (December 3, 1925). The writer has been unable to determine the date of the *Texas Telegraph* in which this advertisement appeared.

⁴⁹Zuber to Buffington, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

⁵⁰Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, II, 1356. Walker county was created on the same day, April 6, 1846, and was also cut from Montgomery county. *Ibid.*, 1357.

corner of same; thence, due south to the Harris county line, thence with said Harris county line, to the head of Spring creek, and from the head of Spring creek to the head of Pond creek; thence by a straight line to the mouth of Beason's creek on the Brazos river; thence, up said stream to the mouth of the Navisoto, and up the Navisoto to the crossing of the San Antonio road; thence, with said road to the northwestern boundary line of Walker county, and down the said county line to the place of beginning."

A lively controversy developed in the new county of Grimes over the location of the county seat. Henry Fanthorp, then a prominent business man and land owner at Alta Mira (now Anderson) offered to donate land for the site; but, as several communities were contending for the honor, the Legislature ordered that an election be held to determine the location. There followed an interesting campaign. On the day of the election, each of the contesting communities prepared a free dinner and provided other forms of amusements for the voters. The majority of the voters registered their preference for the Fanthorp location. A townsite was surveyed a little north of the old town of Alta Mira. The new town was named "Anderson" in honor of Kenneth L. Anderson, the last Vice-President of the Republic of Texas, who had died recently at the Fanthorp hotel in Alta Mira and was buried in the Fanthorp cemetery nearby. It is said that an oak tree on the Fanthorp premises served for a time as the first court house in Grimes county. The county government was soon organized and the following officers were elected: Graves, probate judge; Albert G. Perry, chief justice; Anderson Bufington, district clerk; Daniel E. Harper, county clerk; Guilford M. Mooring, sheriff; F. Brigance, tax collector and assessor; David C. Dickson, representative to the Legislature;

and George Lester, coroner.⁵¹ The new county of Grimes with Walker and Montgomery counties constituted the fifteenth senatorial district (January 16, 1850) with the chief justice of Montgomery county designated to receive election returns and to issue a certificate of election to the senator-elect. Grimes county alone was to constitute the thirtieth representative district and was entitled to one representative.⁵²

Creation of Madison County.—The boundary lines of Grimes county were again changed when on January 27, 1853, the county of Madison was created with metes and bounds as follows:⁵³

“Beginning at the mouth of Bédias creek on the Trinity river, and running up the main Bédias to a point where the line between the counties of Grimes and Walker crosses same; thence by a direct line to the northwest corner of a tract of land in the name of B. Q. Hadley, on the Navasota river; thence up said stream to where the San Antonio road crosses same; thence running with the south boundary of Leon county to the southwest corner of Alce Garrett’s survey; thence on a direct line to the northeast corner of Hiram Walker’s survey on the west bank of the Trinity river, and thence down the river to the place of beginning.”

Following the creation of Madison county a new arrangement was made regarding the senatorial and representative districts. The state was divided into thirty-three senatorial districts with Grimes, Walker, Madison, and Montgomery counties forming the nineteenth district, and the chief justice of Grimes county was designated to issue certificates of election

⁵¹Zuber to Buffington, June 26, 1903. The first name of Graves, the first probate judge of Grimes county was not given by Zuber; he is referred to, however, as being a brother-in-law of George M. Patrick. Only one county commissioner was named. This was Archelaus B. Dodson from North Bédias vicinity. The county records were destroyed by fire and the writer has found nothing there.

⁵²Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, II, 479-483.

⁵³*Ibid.*, III, 1295.

to the senator-elect.⁵⁴ Grimes county alone constituted representative district number thirty-nine, the state having been redivided into seventy-three districts. Grimes county was therefore entitled to one representative in the state Legislature.⁵⁵ This arrangement continued until in 1910 when following a new subdivision of the state, a part of Grimes county with Brazos county was designated as representative district number twenty-six; while the southern portion of Grimes county was thrown with Montgomery county to form representative district number twenty-seven.⁵⁶

Creation of Waller County.—With the creation of Waller county by the state Legislature, April 28, 1873, Grimes county assumed the form that it has since retained. Waller county was established with metes and bounds as follows:

"Beginning at the mouth of Beason's creek on the Brazos river; thence running east to the western boundary line of Montgomery county, where it crosses Mill creek; thence south with the said boundary line to the corner of Montgomery county on Spring creek; thence running on the bed of Spring creek with the Grimes and Harris county line, to the corner of Grimes, Austin, and Harris counties; thence running with the Harris and Austin county line to the corner of Fort Bend, Harris, and Austin counties; thence with Fort Bend and Austin county line to the Brazos river; thence up said river with its various meanderings, to the place of beginning."

The men appointed by the Legislature to organize the new county of Waller were, namely: J. B. McCown, James B. Stephenson, William Maxwell, O. E. Taylor, W. J. Rainwater, and J. C. Greer. They were required to take an oath of office,

⁵⁴Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, III, 1289-1290.

⁵⁵*Ibid.*, 1292.

⁵⁶J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, July 15, 1928. Also *Texas Almanac* for 1929, 268.

which was to be administered by the chief justice of either Grimes or Austin county.⁵⁷

⁵⁷Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, VII, 501.

PART II

INDIAN POPULATION OF GRIMES COUNTY TERRITORY BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES OF THE SIXTY-FOUR ORIGINAL GRANTEES IN GRIMES COUNTY

Chapter III

INDIAN POPULATION OF GRIMES COUNTY AND ITS VICINITY

Bedias.—The region to become Grimes, at the time of the arrival of the American settlers, was inhabited by scattered Indian settlements, the population of which seems to have consisted of mere remnants of former tribes. The writer finds some evidence to indicate that several tribes were represented in the Indian population of Grimes county, namely: Bedias, Kickapoo, and Cushattee. Those Indians belonging to the Bedias tribe were the most numerous and best known. The name "Bedias" means brushwood in the language of the Caddo Indians to which stock the Bedias are supposed to have belonged.¹ The Bedias villages were scattered over a wide territory but principally along the Trinity river. A number of geographical names derived from this tribe survive in this region. The town of Bedias, located in the northern portion

¹Hodge, *Handbook of American Indians North of Mexico*, I, 145. The name is found spelled in great variety of ways. Hodge, in the work cited, spells it "Bidai," and in a footnote calls attention to the following spellings: Badies, Beadeyes, Bedias, Beddies, Bedees, Bedies, Bedais, Bidayes, Bidias, Vedais, Vidaes, Vidais, Vidays, and Vivais. The name as used in Grimes county today is spelled "Bedias" and this form will be used by the writer.

of Grimes county, is situated between two creeks, the South Bedias, and the Big Bedias. These creeks combine before they reach the Trinity river to form the Bedias creek which flows into the Trinity river and forms a part of the boundary line between Walker and Madison counties. These Indians, according to their tribal traditions, were the oldest inhabitants of this region. During the latter part of the eighteenth century they were the chief intermediaries between the French and the Apaches in the trade of fire arms. As a result of the later political controversy between the French and the Spanish, and due to their own inter-tribal wars, and to the introduction of new diseases, their tribal organization was broken up and only remnants of their former villages continued.² Several such villages were found in what was to become Grimes county by the Americans who settled here following 1821. The writer finds mention of such a village having been located within a few miles of the present town of Montgomery, Texas. In writing about this Indian village, Anna L. Davis, of Montgomery, Texas, says:³

"Bedias Indians had a village about six miles west (of Montgomery) on Caney creek. Here also was a burying ground, and arrow heads etc. are still found. They were friendly. Much trading was done between them and the whites. Indians exchanging baskets, wooden bowls, chairs of rattan and hickory, also covers for bottles made of rattan, for such supplies as they desired from the whites. Their custom was to bring baskets and proceed to fill them with whatever supplies desired and offer to exchange basket for its contents, even going to the milking pens of the Shannon home and having bowls filled with milk, after drinking which they would leave the bowl as payment The village was almost wiped out by typhoid fever. Their method of

²Hodge, *Handbook of American Indians North of Mexico*, I, 145.

³Anna L. Davis, "Old Montgomery," *Dallas Morning News*, December 3, 1925.

treatment was to place the patients on high scaffolds and build a smoke under them. Mat Shannon, who was then a boy, told Mrs. Willie Davis that he had seen as many as thirty of such scaffolds with dense smoke rising under them. Dr. Price, father of Mrs. E. C. Wise, wanted to practice among the Indians but they refused, saying, "No good doctor, Bad Medicine."

Hodge also mentions a village of Bedias Indians as having been about twelve miles from the town of Montgomery.⁴ There seems to have been another village of the Bedias Indians in the southern portion of Grimes county, in the vicinity of what came to be known as Grimes Prairie. Mrs. Rosa Groce writes:⁵

"A friendly tribe of Indians "Bidais" lived a few miles from the plantation [Groce's Bernardo] and they were constantly coming to the house begging for meal and other things."

In the same connection, Mrs. Rosa Groce states that Jared E. Groce at one time gave these Indians cotton sacks, promising to give them meal after the sacks were picked full of cotton. It is said that the Indians did as they were told but that they did not repeat the request. The largest Bedias settlement seems to have been in the northern portion of Grimes county and partly in Madison county, near what was known as Spivey Lake in the region of Black Lake Slough. This camp seems to have served as a tryst for the roving bands that frequented this region. The writer is told that a road

⁴Hodge, *Handbook of American Indians North of Mexico*, I, 145.

⁵Rosa Groce, "Jared E. Groce," *Quarterly*, XX, 358-368. Mrs. Margaret Saunders of Navasota, Texas, tells of a Bedias camp having been located on her grandmother's (Margaret McIntire's) league, on Grimes Prairie. H. L. Barry of Navasota, also remembers an Indian village having been located on Grimes Prairie, about ten miles east of Navasota. He (Barry) adds that some of them lived in houses but that most of them lived out-of-doors, and that they did little farming.

crew while cutting a road through from Bedias to Madisonville found a large collection of Indian skeletons and some equipment, thought to have been buried there after a battle with the Mexicans.⁶ The writer is told of another Bedias village located on a farm now owned by Andrew Garner, situated between the towns of Anderson and Navasota, about two miles from Anderson.⁷

Kickapoos.—The writer finds mention of Kickapoo Indians as having lived in this vicinity but has been unable to establish definitely when they came to this section. Hodge makes no mention of any Kickapoos coming into Texas prior to 1852.⁸ During this year, he states that a large body of this tribe, with some Potawatomi, left Kansas and went to Texas and thence to Mexico. W. P. Zuber states that his father, in 1833, occupied huts that had been abandoned by Kickapoo Indians two years previously.⁹ In the same connection, Zuber tells that parties of Kickapoos and Cushattees camped near his father's home, in 1833, with whom the Zubers bartered corn for moccasins, deerskins, venison, and wild turkey. Judge R. P. Harper of Madisonville, Texas, tells of Bedias and Kickapoo Indians having lived together on South Bedias creek, east of the present town of Bedias.

Cushattees.—These Indians had villages on both sides of the Trinity river from which they made hunting expeditions

⁶Told to the writer by Judge R. P. Harper of Madisonville, Texas. The existence of such a large village of Bedias in North Grimes county is common knowledge among the old settlers.

⁷J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, July 15, 1928. Tobe Schumacher to E. L. Blair, August 2, 1929.

⁸Hodge, *Handbook of American Indians North of Mexico*, I, 684.

⁹Zuber, *Eighty Years in Texas*, 133. Manuscript in the State Library, Austin, Texas.

into the region now known as Grimes county.¹⁰ Zuber makes the following comment regarding the Cushattees:¹¹

“Two roads traversed the territory of Grimes county: towit, the La Bahia road and the Cushattee Trace; the latter being a section of the old Contraband road, beaten out and used by smugglers of contraband goods on caravans of pack mules, from Alexandria, Louisiana, to the Rio Grande The section between the Neches and the Brazos was called the Cushattee trace, because it was much used by the Cushattee Indians on their hunting expeditions.”

The Cushattee Indians seem to have been rather well civilized and, according to Edwards, it was not unusual for them to live in well constructed houses, surrounded with peach trees and well-watered gardens and fields, which were sometimes fenced. It seems to have been the custom to leave these villages almost wholly unprotected in the autumn while the Indians ranged afar in search of the winter supply of honey, bear meat, and venison. While on these expeditions they often visited the settlements of the whites with whom they engaged in barter.¹² The number of Cushattee Indians in Texas has been estimated by some at three hundred and fifty.¹³

Relations between Indians and Whites.—The white settlers of Grimes county vicinity seem, for the most part, to have been unmolested by the Indians residing in this territory i.e., the Bedias, Kickapoos, and Cushattees. At times the Indians were insolent and they were beggarly by nature, but they were restrained by presents and forbearance.¹⁴ Men like Jesse Grimes had great influence with these tribes and often sat with them in council. It is said by the old settlers of this section that men of the Bedias tribe served the whites in

¹⁰Edward, D. B., *History of Texas*, 94.

¹¹Zuber to Buffington, June 26, 1903, dated at Iola, Texas.

¹²Edward, *History of Texas*, 94.

¹³De Shields, *Border Wars of Texas*, 153.

¹⁴*Ibid.*, 21-22.

helping to keep out the more hostile Comanches and Cherokees.¹⁵

LOCAL INDIAN STORIES AS TOLD BY PIONEER SETTLERS

Indians Visit the T. P. Plaster Home.—Mrs. Margaret Harrison told the writer this interesting story of an experience with a Bedias warrior. One night while Mrs. T. P. Plaster was at home alone with her children, her husband having gone to Houston for supplies, an Indian man quietly pushed open the door and entered the room. The mother was too terrified to speak, but the little Margaret, too small to know danger, toddled up to the big Indian and put her arms around his leg in an effort to pull him over to a chair that was being pushed out by her little twin brother. The Indian reached down and took the little girl in his arms as he sat down in the chair. By this time the mother had gotten control of herself and was attempting to show friendliness. She made some coffee and offered the Indian a cup. He took the coffee but refused to drink therefrom until he had first given a spoonful to each of the children and to Mrs. Plaster. He then let it be known that he wanted another cup. When offered more food, however, he refused and, after a time, left as quietly as he had come. Subsequently, this same Indian made several visits to the Plaster home, coming at one time when the father was

¹⁵Information regarding the relation of Jesse Grimes with the Indians was furnished the writer by Mrs. W. C. Preston who is a granddaughter of Jesse Grimes. Mrs. Preston resides at Fort Worth, Texas. Hamer Wilson, *Biography of Jesse Grimes*, manuscript prepared by Hamer Wilson while a student in an American History class in Navasota High School. The manuscript is now in the high school library at Navasota. Quoting Mrs. J. T. McGinty as his authority, Wilson states that Bedias warriors often came to the Grimes home when Jesse Grimes was away and remained there to protect the family from hostile Indians. Quoting Mrs. F. B. Wesson of Navasota, Wilson states that Grimes was looked upon by the Indians as a man of high wisdom and was prominent among the Indians as a peacemaker.

away from home and sitting the whole night in a corner of a room, leaving a little before daybreak. At another time, he came and warned the family of the approach of a hostile band of Cherokees. Upon another visit, he found Mr. Plaster sick in bed, and when Mrs. Plaster indicated that they were short of food, the Indian left to appear soon thereafter with a wild turkey which he threw at the feet of Mrs. Plaster.¹⁶

Indians Kill Mrs. Taylor.—The writer has heard the old settlers of this vicinity tell many stories about a party of Indians killing a Mrs. Taylor. The story is that a party of Indians were making an attack on the home of Joshua Hadley about the year 1840. It seems that the community had had some warning of the danger and the people, as was their custom, had hastened to the Hadley home, which was partly fortified. Another party had gathered at the neighboring home of A. D. Kennard. Mrs. Taylor, it seems, was at the Hadley house, while her husband was at the Kennard house. After

¹⁶*Mrs. Margaret J. Harrison to E. L. Blair*, July 15, 1928. Mrs. Margaret Harrison (born March 27, 1840; died at her home in Bedias, Texas, November 8, 1928). Her father, Captain T. P. Plaster (born June 26, 1804; died March 27, 1861), came to Texas from Giles county, Tennessee, in 1835 or 1836. The following quotation is from an article published soon after Captain T. P. Plaster's death. This clipping was found among the papers of Mrs. Margaret J. Harrison. The writer has been unable to find it in the *State Gazette*, which was published at Austin in 1861.

"Captain Plaster . . . was a citizen and soldier of the Republic. He emigrated from Giles county, Tennessee, to Texas 1835 or 1836 and bore a heroic part in the revolution then going on, and at San Jacinto he aided in the management of one of the 'Twin Sisters' which did such good and efficient service upon that bloody field. This campaign being one which resulted so gloriously to the arms of Texas, he settled in Montgomery (now Grimes) county where he has continued to reside up to his death. Without pretension, he was an honest, upright man, and ever ready to meet any call made upon him either by country or friend. The House of Representatives, of which body he was the doorkeeper, adopted, on the morning after his death, resolutions of respect to his memory."

T. P. Plaster married Dolly Samuel (born March 22, 1808; died January 21, 1857) daughter of Antonio Samuel of Giles county, Tennessee, by whom he had nine children, namely: Thomas A. Plaster (born June 26, 1828; died in February of 1918), William M. Plaster (born January 8, 1830; died in February of 1918), Martha Plaster (died in early youth), James Plaster (died in early youth), Ben-

the Indians had been repulsed from the Hadley house, Mrs. Taylor, who had become greatly excited, insisted upon going across to the A. D. Kennard house with her two children. The Kennard house was situated about a mile from the Hadley house, and in spite of warning, Mrs. Taylor started with her two children (some say two sons and others say a son and a daughter) across an open field toward the Kennard house. She was killed by the Indians within sight of the Hadley house, and the children were captured. The Indians were later pursued and the children recaptured. One, a boy, was shot through the hand, but the children were otherwise uninjured. They were taken to the home of Hanry Fanthorp where they were cared for until their people came for them. It is said that this was the last person killed by Indians in Grimes county territory. According to Franklin Brigance, the last Indian raid took place in the winter of 1841. He states that the raiders then escaped through the Roan's Prairie community and that they were pursued by a company of nine men who left the Fanthorp home at about sunrise and pursued the Indians for about twenty miles, when they came suddenly upon them. The Indians made good their escape by leaving all their equipment in camp. Brigance, however, makes no mention of the attack on the Hadley home, nor does he mention the recapture of any white children. The writer is, therefore, unable to determine whether he is speaking of the same raid as that referred to in the above story.¹⁷

jamin Plaster (born March 28, 1838; died January 14, 1857), Joseph H. Plaster (born March 27, 1840; died September 2, 1927), Margaret J. Plaster (born March 27, 1840; died November 8, 1928), Frank Plaster (born March 22, 1842; died January 6, 1905). Margaret J. Plaster married B. H. Harrison (February 20, 1856) by whom she bore eleven children, ten of whom lived to be adults, and seven of whom are now living. The writer feels deeply indebted to Mrs. Margaret J. Harrison for her kindly assistance during the summer of 1928.

¹⁷J. C. McDonald to E. L. Blair, July 15, 1928. Mr. McDonald says that, in

Indians Kill Kennard's Calves.—Another story is told of an Indian raid during which Indians killed several calves belonging to A. D. Kennard within sight of the Kennard home. It seems that all the men were away from home when an old negro slave woman discovered the Indians killing the calves in a nearby pasture. The faithful negress hastened to the house and broke the news to Mrs. Kennard. When Mrs. Kennard made no move to protect her property, the negro woman became vexed and exclaimed, "Missis, what shall we do? What shall we do?" to which Mrs. Kennard replied that they could do nothing but trust in the Lord; at which remark, the negress retorted, "Dat am mighty pore help, when de Injuns am out dar killing the calves."¹⁸

Methods of Precaution against Indian Attacks at Night.—J. W. Blake, now of Houston, Texas, tells of hearing his grandmother, Mrs. John Durst, explain that it was customary to have the negroes bring the horses and cattle up near the front of the house at night so that they could be guarded against theft by the Indians. She told that on many nights she would sit on the front porch with a gun across her lap

1870, while riding by the Hadley home with his father, J. G. McDonald, Senior, he was told the above story, and that his father told him it happened in 1840. *Mrs. Margaret Saunders to E. L. Blair*, August 2, 1928. Mrs. Saunders, granddaughter of Margaret McIntire who settled in Grimes Prairie in 1825, has an Indian tomahawk said to have been taken from the Indians who killed Mrs. Taylor. Mrs. Saunders says these were Comanche Indians. Mrs. E. F. Edwards of Shiro, Texas, tells the story a little differently. She says that Mrs. Taylor was killed and scalped, and that the children were a boy and a girl. The boy was shot through the hand. According to Mrs. Edwards, the children escaped by aid of a faithful negro slave by the name of Jack Hadley. She also places the event several years earlier than 1840. Mrs. E. F. Edwards seems to have gotten her information from her mother-in-law, Mrs. Joe Edwards, who was an eye witness to the tragedy, having been in the Hadley house at the time it happened. *Mrs. E. F. Edwards, "History Shiro," Navasota Daily Examiner*, October 22, 1924. *Franklin Brigrance Memoirs*, manuscript now in the possession of Mrs. Frank Brigrance, Navasota, Texas.

¹⁸J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, July 15, 1928.

to guard the animals while her husband was away, or while he rested after a hard day's labor. Mrs. Margaret Saunders tells of her mother, Mrs. Sarah McIntire, sleeping on the top of the house in order to be more safe from discovery, in the event of an Indian raid while her husband, Robert McIntire, was away from home.

Indians Kill Man on Wallace Prairie.—The story is of a vague nature, but the old settlers tell of a man named Shark who lived on Wallace Prairie near Groce's Retreat, being killed by Indians in retaliation for the killing of an Indian by whites. Shark, so the story goes, was taken from a sick bed, and killed by the Indians.¹⁹

Indian Expedition of 1839.—Franklin Brigance tells of an expedition made against the Comanches in 1839. He says that a company assembled in the fall of 1839, at Tinnonville, where the old San Antonio and Nacogdoches road crossed the Navasota river. From here they went to Comanche Peak, on the west side of the Brazos river. Crossing the Brazos river, where Waco now stands, they came upon an Indian village occupied by about one hundred and thirty Indians. An attack was made but all the Indians escaped except one who was killed. A Mexican was made prisoner. A number of horses, mules, and some Indian equipment were captured.²⁰ The company of whites then crossed to the east side of the Brazos river and made their way homeward by way of Wheelock, which was then on the extreme edge of the white settlement. On the return trip, two officers were killed by Indians. These officers were riding at some distance ahead of the company and were killed while watering at Richland

¹⁹*Mrs. Margaret Saunders to E. L. Blair, August 2, 1928.*

²⁰It is hardly possible that these Indians could have been Comanches. They were in all probability Wacos or Tonkawas.

creek. The Indians escaped and the bodies of the slain officers were buried at the foot of an oak tree in a nearby prairie.²¹

Military Preparedness against Indians in 1837.—A fair idea of the precautionary measures used by the pioneer settlers of this vicinity can be had from the following explanation given by W. P. Zuber:

“Our militia company was divided into six platoons, each platoon had a commanding officer appointed. They served by turns, each serving a week at a time. Their service was to cover the woods in

²¹Franklin Brigance, “Memoirs.” This is a manuscript written by Franklin Brigance and now in the possession of Mrs. Frank Brigance of Navasota, Texas. Franklin Brigance (born August 12, 1818, in Sumner county, Tennessee; died in Grimes County, June 17, 1900) was the son of Charles Newton and Fannie (Dyer) Brigance of Tennessee. Franklin Brigance was working at the tailor’s trade with an uncle, William Brigance, at Huntington, Tennessee, when news of Sam Houston’s victory at San Jacinto reached him. Learning that his father had decided to move to Texas, Franklin Brigance hastened home to join the undertaking. They left McKenzie, Tennessee, in December of 1838 and went to Nashville, Tennessee, and thence to Clarksville, where they embarked on the steamboat *Rocky Mountain* for New Orleans. At New Orleans they took passage to Galveston on the *Dolphine*, and arrived at Houston, February 22, 1839. From Houston, they came by wagon to Black’s Prairie in what is now Grimes county. Upon arrival here, they stopped for a time with John F. Martin, then on Spring Creek, but purchased land in time to begin farming in the fall of 1839. Franklin Brigance returned to Tennessee in 1843 and while there entered school, where he remained until the fall of 1844. He then returned to Texas by way of New Orleans, Galveston, Houston, and Cypress. He walked from Cypress to Fanthorp’s tavern. On November 6, 1849, he married Susan Emily Rogers, by whom he had seven children, namely: Thomas, John H. (born September 26, 1869; died 1913), A. Franklin (born December 17, 1852; died April 16, 1923), Mattie, Burton, Edna, and Lewin (born September 6, 1850; died October 6, 1852). Thomas Brigance was the father of Joseph Tucker Brigance now of Beaumont, Texas. A Franklin Brigance’s widow now resides at Navasota, Texas. Mattie Brigance is now Mrs. R. B. S. Foster of Navasota, Texas. Burton Brigance now resides at Chappell Hill, Texas. Edna Brigance now resides at Navasota, Texas. Franklin Brigance was active in the affairs of this community and county, serving as district clerk three terms, 1880–1882, and again 1886–1890. *Minutes of Commissioner’s Court*, C. 148, and D, 22 and 136. He was postmaster at Anderson, Texas, 1889–1896. He was an active Methodist and served as secretary of the Methodist church at Anderson for sixty years. This information was taken from his *Memoirs*, cited above, and from the *Brigance Family Bible*.

search for Indians or Indian trails, in the event any such were found, they were to be driven out."

Zuber, in this same connection, states that the Indians, upon learning of such preparedness, ceased to molest the settlements.²²

Indians Removed from Grimes County.—The United States Government began to remove the Indians from this section to the various Indian reservations about 1854. Old settlers remember the sight of squads of Indians marching through Anderson on their journey to their reservations.²³ By the year 1860, only six Indians were listed by the United States Census as then residing within Grimes county. Of these, two were women and four were men.²⁴ Three Indians were listed as residing in Grimes county in 1870; four in 1880 and none in 1890.²⁵

²²Zuber, *Eighty Years in Texas*, 80. Manuscript in State Library.

²³L. H. Barry to E. L. Blair, July 3, 1928.

²⁴*Eighth Census of the United States, Texas Compendium*, 537.

²⁵*Eleventh Census of the United States, Texas Compendium*, 483.

Chapter IV

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES OF THE SIXTY-FOUR ORIGINAL GRANTEES IN GRIMES COUNTY

In the preparation of the following sketches, the writer has made no pretense at narrative continuity. Each biographical sketch is to be considered an independent unit within itself. For the sake of convenience, the sixty-four pioneers are considered in alphabetical order.

Robert Armour.—The writer has found little of historic interest concerning Robert Armour. He came to Texas from the state of Tennessee, landing at Matagorda, during the year 1833.¹ He later settled in what is now the northwest portion of Grimes county, where he secured a grant of one league of land.² At the time of his arrival in Texas, he was about forty-six years of age and had a family consisting of a wife and five children. The name of the wife is not known to the writer. The children were Delilah, Elizabeth, Denina, Folly, and a son whose name is not mentioned.³ Delilah Armour married Tandy Walker and a sketch of her family will be found on page No. 147 of this thesis. Elizabeth Armour (born October 23, 1823; died May 23, 1887) married

¹*L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, dated August 15, 1928, at Brady, Texas. Ballou is a grandson of Robert Armour.

²*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. Date of his application is May, 1835. That of his patent is October 5, 1835. These dates taken from *Land Applications*, 69, of record in the Texas Land Office, Austin, Texas.

³In his application for land dated May, 1835, he gave his age as forty-eight years and stated that he had five children, four daughters and one son. In the *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, II, 462, the following are listed as heirs of Robert Armour: Elizabeth Ballou, Delilah Walker, Denina Armour, and Polly Ann Armour. L. Ballou of Brady, Texas, also gives the names as above.

on March 8, 1838, to S. T. Ballou, by whom she had eight children, namely: Julia A. (born December 17, 1839; died September 5, 1843), George (born November 7, 1841; died February 17, 1846), Lugenio (born November 4, 1843), Lucretia (born January 17, 1846; died January 13, 1926), Seth T. (born December 17, 1846), Wilford C. (born March 7, 1851; died December 6, 1899), Charles (born December 15, 1852; died December 20, 1852), and Ann Maria (born May 17, 1856; died June 15, 1920).⁴ Denina Armour died unmarried. Polly Ann Armour married in 1850, Elic (possibly the real name was Alexander) Davis, by whom she had one son. The fifth child of Robert Armour was a son whose name the writer does not have. He seems to have returned to Tennessee soon after their arrival in Texas, and it is thought that he died there by accident.

Daniel Arnold.—Information concerning Daniel Arnold is confined to what is found in his application for land, and his patent thereto. The writer has been unable to locate any living descendants. His application for land was made in 1826, at which time he was a married man, forty-eight years of age, and was the father of four children, two sons and

⁴S. T. Ballou, husband of Elizabeth Armour, came to Texas from Providence, Rhode Island, arriving at Velasco, in the year 1834. He is said to have been in the Texas army under General Sam Houston during the year 1836, but the writer has been unable to verify this. His name does not appear on the list of soldiers who fought in the Battle of San Jacinto (found in the archives of the State Library at Austin, Texas). Lugenio Ballou now resides at Brady, Texas. He was born in Grimes county in 1843 and the writer is indebted to him for much of the data given here. L. Ballou served three years and ten days in the Confederate army. (The writer has not verified this, but gives what Lugenia Ballou stated.) Lugenia Ballou was married, April 19, 1866, to Miss Charlott C. Black, daughter of Charles Black of Galveston, Texas. She lived for only a short time after the marriage, dying on August 13, 1866. Six years later, July 22, 1872, Lugenia Ballou married Blanche Ryan (born March 18, 1854), daughter of Joseph Ryan of Goliad, Texas. They are the parents of three living children, namely: Clara Wood, Mary Merwin, and William Henry. All three now reside at Brady, Texas. Seth T. Ballou, Junior, now resides at Hamilton, Texas.

two daughters. His wife's name was Rachel, and she was forty-three years old in 1826. The family came to Texas from the state of Mississippi. He seems to have been possessed of considerable property, for he is listed as bringing five slaves with him to Texas.⁵ His grant was for one league, patent to which is dated May 9, 1831. This league is located in the western portion of Grimes county, and on this survey now is located the little city of Navasota.⁶

Benjamin Babbitt.—There is a quarter league grant in the extreme southern part of Grimes county which was patented to Benjamin Babbitt, November 22, 1832.⁷ Scant information has been found concerning this settler. At the time of his grant he was unmarried, but we find him asking for additional land in 1845, because he had then married.⁸ The writer has found no record of any descendants.

James Bell.—The James Bell three-quarter league grant lies in the extreme southern portion of Grimes county and in the northern portion of what is now Waller county. In fact, four-fifths of the land granted James Bell lies in Waller county. The writer has found very little concerning James Bell. His land patent is dated December 2, 1832.⁹ At this time he was single. It is known, however, that he married later, for he asked for more land and gave, as his reason, the fact that he was then married. Bell was one of the heroes of San Jacinto, having served in Company B, First Regiment of

⁵These facts are taken from his *Land Application*, of record in the Land Office of Texas, Austin, Texas.

⁶*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. See map in Appendix II. Daniel Arnold sold one-half a league to John F. Crawford on November 8, 1847. There is also a record of Daniel Arnold having sold a portion of his land to Henry Austin, April 26, 1837. *Deed Records of Grimes County*, A-2, 202, and Q, 373.

⁷*Ibid.*, 604. For location, see map in Appendix II.

⁸*Texas Land Grants*, IX, 161.

⁹*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. See map in Appendix II.

Texas Volunteers. He seems to have possessed much land besides that in Grimes county. He received ten leagues on the Sabine and Trinity rivers from Williams, Johnson and Peebles.¹⁰

John S. Black.—This colonist hailed from the state of Tennessee, arriving in Texas some time during the year 1830, or possibly before this year. His land application was made in 1830, and a grant of one league is patented to him under date of April 6, 1831.¹¹ Black seems to have participated actively in the military activities then in progress. With his eldest son, Monroe, he joined the Texas army and is said to have participated in the siege of Bexar, December 5 to 9, 1835.¹² John S. Black was forty years old at the time of his application for land (1830). He was then married, and had a family consisting of his wife, Mary (then thirty-two years old), and five children, three sons and two daughters, namely: Monroe, Gavin Bingley, John S., Junior, Lucinda, and William.¹³ Monroe Black married and raised a family, but the writer has no information concerning his descendants.¹⁴ Gavin Bingley Black (born February 19, 1822; died October 4, 1868) married Margaret Anna Moore (born December 17, 1826;

¹⁰*Texas Land Grants*, VI, 2030, and McDonald, J. B., *The Soldiers of San Jacinto* (MS), 1922, 52.

¹¹*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. Also *Application for Land*, of record in the Texas Land Office, Austin, Texas.

¹²*Zuber to Buffington*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

¹³*Application for Land*, of record in Land Office of Texas, Austin, Texas. *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, II, 586. Also *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, I, 220. Here it is stated that on May 27, 1855, all the above children were living in Grimes county except Lucinda. They were all then (1855) of legal age except William Black, who was represented by his attorney, John W. Hutchison. The Probate records failed to mention the name of John S. Black, but list a John L. M. Black. The above children were also named to the writer by Gus S. Black who lately resided at Navasota, Texas. Gus Black is a great-grandson of John S. Black.

¹⁴*Gus S. Black to E. L. Blair*, July 10, 1928.

died December 5, 1870), by whom he had thirteen children, namely: John Maxie, George Patrick, Henrietta Porter, Richard, Charlie L., Francis (Frank), Anna Mae, Tom, Hambright H., Mary Ann, Gavin Bingley, Junior, Sallie Mike, and Jesse Lee.¹⁵ John S. Black, Junior, (born 1818; died in Grimes

¹⁵*Gus S. Black to E. L. Blair*, July 10, 1928, and *Mrs. W. T. Schumacher to E. L. Blair*, July 23, 1928. Maxie Black was a deaf mute. He never married. He was educated at the Deaf and Dumb Institute at Austin, Texas. George Patrick (born March 17, 1846) served as deputy sheriff in Grimes county under Sheriff J. Cross Baker, 1900-1902. He married Catherine Grissett, daughter of Charlie Grissett of Grimes county, by whom he had seven children, namely: Gavin, Bingley, Gus S., George Patrick, Maggie, Lizzie, Alexander Franklin Brigance. Concerning these children, Gavin Black now resides at Roan's Prairie, in Grimes county. He married Irene Mayfield in 1891. They have one living child, Anna Mae. Bingley Black died at the age of thirteen years. Gus S. Black died a few months ago at Navasota. The writer is indebted to him for a large part of the information given about this family. The wife of Gus S. Black was formerly Annie Sophia Kelley. She is the daughter of Hugh Kelley. They were married on December 13, 1894, and have been the parents of eleven children, namely: Gracey Mae, Hugh Patrick (died in infancy), Catherine, Charlie Gavin, Gus S. Junior, Mary M., Bertha Lois, Margaret Anne, Herman M., Lucy P., and Larvis Wilson. George Patrick Black, Junior, married Mamie Clifton. They now reside at Houston and have several children. Maggie Black is now Mrs. Herman M. Kelley of Ervin community. They have no children. Lizzie Black is now Mrs. Andrew Tabor of Bryan, Texas. She is a widow and the mother of three children, namely: Mary Lizzie, Andrew P., and Andrew Jackson. Alexander Franklin Brigance Black married Lucy Bounds. They now reside at Navasota and have no children. Henrietta Porter Black married George Mabry, by whom she had three children, namely: Alfa, George, and Frank. Alfa Mabry is now Mrs. Duncan Evans of Madisonville, Texas, and is the mother of four children. George Mabry is also married and has three children, namely: Lorene, Gale, and David. Frank Mabry is now a physician at Port Arthur, Texas. Richard Black (born August 28, 1848) married Tressy Robinson, who died at the birth of their only child, Will L. Black. This son grew to manhood and married Lucy Perry of the Erwin community, by whom he had four children, namely: Ephriam, Will L. Junior, Richard, and Francis. Will L. Black married a second time but the writer has no information about the children of the second marriage. Richard Black, father of Will L. Black, later married Gennie Mobley by whom he had four children, namely: Addie, Mattie, Parham, and Ella. Concerning these, Addie Black married E. Fuqua and was the mother of seven children, namely: Sanford, Edward, Claude, Myrtle (now Mrs. William Arrington), Richard, Maurice, and Boone. Mattie Black married and has several children. Ella Black died unmarried. Charlie L. Black, son of Gavin Bingley Black, died at the age of forty years unmarried. Frank Moore Black moved from Grimes to Madison county years ago where he served as sheriff and tax-collector for about twenty years. His wife's name was

county in 1893) is remembered as an enthusiastic Royal Arch Mason, whose ambition it was to have the country around Anderson settled with Masons only. John S. Black married Millie Hanley of Grimes county, by whom he had five children, namely: Mary, Isa, Tumpie, John S., Junior, and Calvin H. Black.¹⁶ Lucinda Black, daughter of John S. Black, Senior,

Lucinda. They have five children, namely: Cary, Luen, Frank, Olen, and Earl. Annie Mae Black, daughter of Gavin Bingley Black, married Pleas Smith of Keith community. Her husband died leaving no children and the widow later married John F. Thomas. There were no children. Tom C. B. Black, son of Gavin Bingley Black, moved from Grimes to Hill county. He is the father of C. L. Black who is now an attorney at Austin, Texas. C. L. Black married Agada Bowman and they have three children, namely: Charles L. Junior, Margaret, and Bowman. Hambright H. Black married Para Lee Horton, by whom he had one son, Charlie Black, who is now in Mexico. After the death of Para Lee, Hambright H. Black married her sister, Dela Horton, by whom he had six children, namely: Anna Mae, Jennie, Para Lee, Marshall Maxie, Hettie Bell, and Jewell. Jennie Black is now Mrs. Doyle Andrews. Para Lee Black is now Mrs. George Conoly, and Hettie Bell is now Mrs. Glenn Ahrenbeck. The other children of Gavin Bingley Black, namely: Mary Ann, Gavin Bingley, Junior, Sallie Mike, and Jesse Lee, died in early youth.

¹⁶*W. T. Schumacher to E. L. Blair*, August 2, 1928; *Zuber to Buffington*, June 26, 1903; and *Gus S. Black to E. L. Blair*, July 10, 1928. Gus S. Black is a nephew of John S. Black, Senior. He tells an interesting Indian story about an experience John S. Black had with Indians. The story is that John S. Black went out one morning to get his horse which was hobbled on Scott's Prairie. The grass was so high that only the back of the horse could be seen from the house. On the way across the prairie, Black killed a wild turkey and left it hanging in a tree. Mounting his horse, he had ridden only a short distance when an Indian arrow struck his large, tall, big-brimmed hat. Being unable to tell from what direction the arrow came, Black started to ride rapidly forward, when another arrow came dangerously near. Black allowed himself to fall from his horse, trying to make it appear that he was wounded. He waited quietly with only his pistol and five cartridges. When the Indians failed to appear, he placed his hat on a stick and holding it just high enough to be seen, started walking forward. After a few steps, another arrow was shot through the hat, whereupon it was allowed to fall slowly forward. The Indians then rushed into the open and within close range. Black opened fire with his pistol and killed three of the six Indians, and the other three fled. Black then remounted and rode rapidly toward home, but did not forget to stop and get his turkey from the tree.

Mary Black, daughter of John S. Black, Junior, was born on February 23, 1857. She married Ben F. Smith, commonly known as "Tobe" Smith, by whom she had eight children, namely: George, Myrtle, Parham, Mason, Grace, Floy, Pleas, and Blanche. George Smith now resides at Keith, in Grimes county. Myrtle died in

married a man by the name of McCown, by whom she had several children, but about whom the writer has no informa-

youth. Parham married Willie Trant, daughter of Sam Trant, a prominent cattle man of Grimes county. They were married on October 11, 1903, and both are now living at Navasota, Texas. They have two sons, namely: Wilson (born December 5, 1906), now a student at Baylor Medical College, at Dallas, Texas; and Weyman, now a high school student at Navasota. Weyman was born January 11, 1913. Mason Smith, son of Ben F. Smith, married Leona Smith. They reside at Carlos, in Grimes county, and have no children. Grace Smith is now Mrs. L. P. Harrison of Houston, Texas. She is a widow with four children, namely: Lloyd, Alva, Forest, and Edna. Edna, the eldest, is now Mrs. Joe Shannon of Houston. Floy Smith, daughter of Ben F. Smith, is now Mrs. C. T. Davis of College Station, Texas. She is the mother of six children, namely: Kenneth, Alga, Earl, Mary Lou, Blanche, and Joe Hearne. Pleas Smith died in infancy and the writer has no information about his sister Blanche. Isa Black, daughter of John S. Black, Junior, was born on October 11, 1859. She is now Mrs. W. T. (Tobe) Schumacher of Keith community, Grimes county. W. T. Schumacher is the son of Henry Schumacher (born in Mecklenburg-Schwerin, Germany, in 1832; died May 26, 1901, in Grimes county) who came to Texas, from Germany, landing at Galveston in 1847. Henry Schumacher moved to Anderson, in Grimes county, in 1855, and to Navasota, in 1865. During the Civil War he served in the Eighth Texas Cavalry, in Walker's Division. He was among the first to recognize the possibilities of cotton seed and established the cotton seed oil mill which still operates under his name at Navasota. Henry Schumacher was active in the organization of the First National Bank at Navasota, Texas, and served for a time as its president. In 1858, he married Susan Berryman, granddaughter of Francis Holland. She was the mother of W. T. (Tobe) Schumacher. Henry Schumacher had a son, Henry D. Schumacher, now of Houston, by his first wife, Louise Koch, who died at Anderson in 1856. By a third wife, Emma Horlock, Henry Schumacher had eight children, namely: Ada, Robert H., W. W., Minnie, Ella, Emma, Baylor, and Ruth. ("Obituary of Henry Schumacher," *Navasota Weekly Review*, May 30, 1901.) Nine children were born to Isa and W. T. Schumacher, namely: Emma (born November 10, 1879), William H., James A., Etta, Ethel Eleanor, Isa, Lizzie, and Aubrey J. Schumacher. Concerning these, Emma is now Mrs. M. H. Heith of Waco, Texas; William H. Schumacher now resides at Houston; James A. Schumacher also resides at Houston; Ethel is now Mrs. T. D. Crenshaw of Grimes county; Eleanor is Mrs. William Midland of Houston; Isa is Mrs. R. L. Lavender of Grimes county; Lizzie Lee is Mrs. G. D. Samuels of Dallas; and Aubrey J. Schumacher resides at Iola, Grimes county. (*Mrs. W. T. Schumacher to E. L. Blair*, July 23, 1928) Tumpie Black, daughter of John S. Black, Junior, married Jim V. Floyd, by whom she had several children, of whom the writer has the names of four, namely: Clay, Ben, Tommie, and David B. Floyd. Clay is now Mrs. Leo Keelan and has one son, Floyd Keelan. Ben Floyd is now in the United States army and is thought to be stationed in the Philippine Islands. David B. Floyd is now residing at Los Angeles, California. Tommie Floyd resides at Navasota, Texas.

tion. She survived her first husband and married Nelson Lake, by whom she had one son, Frank L. Lake, who is now living and is the father of several children.¹⁷ William Black, the youngest son of the pioneer, John S. Black, Senior, is mentioned in the probate records of Grimes county, but the writer has no additional information.¹⁸

Marcus D. Black.—The writer has found no record of Marcus D. Black other than what is given in his application for land and in his land patent. These documents show that he came to Texas from the state of Alabama. He was not married in 1830, the date of his land application.¹⁹ He received one-fourth of a league of land, patent to which was dated April 6, 1831.²⁰ This land is situated in the central part of Grimes county and joins the John S. Black survey on the west side of the latter.²¹ Marcus D. Black's land patent is dated on the same day as that of John S. Black. The latter, however, is listed as having come from the state of Tennessee, and none of his descendants, with whom the writer has conferred, know anything of a Marcus D. Black. Gus S. Black of Navasota, Texas, remembers an old kinsman who was known as "Captain Lafitte" Black, and thinks the man was probably a brother to the elder John S. Black. The writer is inclined to believe that this may have been Marcus D.

(*William Floyd to E. L. Blair*, July 5, 1928) John S. Black, son of John S. Black, Junior, married Pet Cook of Keith community in Grimes county. Both are now deceased. There were seven children, namely: Ora, Calvin H., Clarence, Ruby, Gordon, Fred, and Jerome. Ora is now Mrs. Charlie Lindley of Fort Worth, Texas. Calvin is married and living in California. Clarence is living in Dallas, Texas. Ruby is now Mrs. Hugh Weaver of Houston. Fred also lives at Houston. Gordon now resides at Brazoria, Texas, and Jerome is married and living at Dallas.

¹⁷*Gus S. Black to E. L. Blair*, July 10, 1928.

¹⁸*Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, II, 586, and *Ibid.*, L, 220.

¹⁹*Land Applications*, in the General Land Office at Austin, Texas.

²⁰*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²¹See map in the appendix of this thesis.

Black, and that he was known to the younger Blacks only by a nickname, "Captain Lafitte."

John Bowman.—There seems to have been an intimate acquaintance existing between John Bowman and Stephen F. Austin that dated back prior to 1811, when they were together in Louisiana.²² In the year 1811, Bowman was back in Mercer county, Kentucky, where he had gone, it seems, with the intention of making an early return to Louisiana, but had been induced to remain through the influence of his mother and other friends. At this time (1811) he was farming and was unmarried.²³ Bowman remained in Kentucky as late as 1813, but evidently moved thence to Arkansas prior to 1821, for he came to Texas in the latter year and his application for land, dated 1830, shows that he came from the state of Arkansas.²⁴ The name of John Bowman appears in a list of the qualified voters at San Felipe de Austin, December 22, 1824. In the following year (1825) however, he was living in the District of Colorado.²⁵ His name is signed to a resolution condemning the Fredonian Rebellion at Nacogdoches and dated at Simms Prairie, January 4, 1827. John Bowman was appointed lieutenant in the Fourth Company of militia organized in the municipality of Austin on March 21, 1829. The records, however, fail to show whether he ever qualified.²⁶

²²Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 189. *John Bowman to Stephen F. Austin.*

²³*Ibid.*

²⁴*Proceedings of the Convention of Texas Veterans*, 1873. John Bowman's name appears on the rolls as having served in a military or political capacity in Texas between 1820 and April 23, 1836. He was then residing in Cherokee county, Texas. He was listed as having migrated to Texas in 1821.

²⁵Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 996 and 1244. His name appears in the Census report of the Colorado district, December 31, 1825. He was then a farmer and was shown as having no children or slaves.

²⁶Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXI, 408-409.

John Bowman was married and the father of two children, a boy and a girl, at the time he made application for land in 1830. In his application, he gave his age as fifty years, and stated that his wife's name was Margaret, whose age was given as twenty-nine years.²⁷ He was granted one league of land, patent to which is dated April 6, 1831. This land is situated a few miles northwest of the present town of Anderson in Grimes county.²⁸ Bowman seems to have been active in the affairs of his district. He was elected comisario of the district of Viesca in 1831.²⁹

Concerning the descendants of John Bowman, the writer has no data. Miss Grace H. Bowman of College Station, Texas, granddaughter of James I. Bowman, pioneer of Brazos county, thinks that John and James Bowman, of early Grimes county, were cousins to her grandfather. Mrs. Luke Moore, who resides at 1701 Lysle Avenue, Waco, Texas, is a descendant of James I. Bowman, formerly of Brazos county. This lady is now (1929) about seventy years of age and might be able to give some information as to the present whereabouts of the descendants of John Bowman. The writer, however, has been unable to get an answer to communications addressed to Mrs. Moore. As mentioned above, it is known that John Bowman was living in Cherokee county in the year 1873.³⁰ It seems probable that this family left Grimes county shortly after the establishment of the independence of Texas. Information about the time Bowman sold his property in Grimes

²⁷*Application for Land*, 89, of record in Texas Land Office. Three children, namely: Peggy, Eli, and William are named. *Deed Records of Grimes County*, C-2, 717.

²⁸*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. Also map in Appendix II.

²⁹Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXIV, 162. With him served Peter Whitaker as Sindico.

³⁰*Proceedings of the Convention of Texas Veterans*, 1873.

county could probably be secured from the deed records of Grimes county.

Samuel Bowman.—The writer has found nothing concerning Samuel Bowman or his descendants except that he applied for land September 22, 1835, through Horatio Chriesman as agent. His application shows that he was at that time married.³¹ His grant of one league was located in the extreme northern part of Grimes county (map in Appendix II) and this fact suggests to the mind of the writer the probability that this Samuel Bowman may have been related to the Bowman pioneers of Brazos county.³² Samuel Bowman's land patent is dated October 16, 1835, and was sold, October 17, 1835, to D. L. Richardson.³³

Alexander Brown.—Alexander Brown came to Texas from the state of Arkansas prior to April 23, 1826.³⁴ He applied for a league of land in 1830.³⁵ His grant, situated in Grimes county a few miles northeast of the present town of Anderson, was patented May 17, 1831.³⁶ At the time of his application for land, Brown was thirty-two years old and had a wife and two daughters. His wife's name was Sally, and her age was given as twenty-four years. They owned one negro slave. There are many Browns in Grimes county today. The writer has investigated three distinct groups and has found no one who knew anything about this particular Alexander Brown.³⁷

³¹*Application for Land*, 81, Land Office of Texas.

³²For additional information regarding the Bowmans of Brazos county, communicate with Miss Grace H. Bowman, College Station, Texas.

³³*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604, and *Deed Records of Grimes County*, C-2, 627.

³⁴Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1320. Alexander Brown's name appears signed to an affidavit regarding an Indian attack, dated April 23, 1826.

³⁵*Application for Land*, 89. Of record in Texas Land Office, Austin, Texas.

³⁶*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³⁷*Application for Land*, 89. Of record in Texas Land Office, Austin, Texas.

William Burney.—William Burney came to Texas with Francis and William Holland in 1822 from Louisiana.³⁸ Soon after arrival (prior to 1828) he married Susanna Holland, eldest daughter of Francis Holland.³⁹ His grant of one league was located so as to join the land of his father-in-law on the south.⁴⁰ In his application for land (1828) Burney gave his age as thirty-one and that of his wife as twenty-four.⁴¹ It seems that they reared a large family; the writer, however, has been unable to locate any living descendants. William Burney died about 1850. His heirs, as given in the Grimes county probate records under date of May 6, 1850, were Francis Burney, Nancy, who was then Mrs. Thomas Buttrile, Sarah Burney, William Burney, Tapley Burney, Richard Burney, and Susan Burney.⁴²

Cyrus Campbell.—There are many Campbells now in Grimes county, but the writer has found no descendants of the Cyrus Campbell who applied for land as one of Austin's colonists in 1835. In his application for land, Cyrus Campbell states that he came to Texas from the state of Arkansas, that he was then twenty-five years old, that his wife's name was Rebecca, and gives her age as seventeen years. Campbell was a blacksmith by trade.⁴³ He was granted one league of land, patent to which was dated October 22, 1835.⁴⁴ This league is situated in Grimes county a few miles east of the

³⁸*W. P. Zuber to Buffington*, dated June 26, 1903, at Iola, Texas. Zuber gives the date of their arrival in Texas as 1822, and says that Burney came with the Hollands. His application for land, however, is dated 1828. It could very easily be true that he came with the Hollands in 1822 but delayed to make application for land until after his marriage.

³⁹*Ibid.* Also *Transcribed Deeds of Montgomery County*, XXCIII, 20-21.

⁴⁰*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. See map in Appendix II.

⁴¹*Application for Land*, 55. Of record in Texas Land Office, Austin, Texas.

⁴²*Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, I, 253, also 255-266.

⁴³*Applications for Land*, 59. Land Office, Austin, Texas.

present town of Singleton. (See map in Appendix II.) The writer finds no mention of a Cyrus Campbell in the Austin papers.⁴⁵

John C. Conner.—This colonist came to Texas about 1830 from the state of Kentucky.⁴⁶ His application for land is dated 1832, and in it he gives his age as twenty-two years and states that he was a widower with one daughter.⁴⁷ His league is situated in the extreme eastern portion of Grimes county and is partly in Walker county. The patent is dated October 22, 1835.⁴⁸ John C. Conner seems to have been acquainted with the Austins, at least in a business way, several years prior to his coming to Texas. He is mentioned in the Austin Papers in several connections; for example, there is a record of John Conner having purchased a tract of land in Louisiana in about 1806.⁴⁹ His name is signed to a testimonial of character given to a Mr. John Woolsey, dated December 7, 1820, at Hempstead, Territory of Arkansas.⁵⁰ His name appears again as owing a small sum of money to Moses Austin on May 9, 1821.⁵¹ John Conner is listed as

⁴⁵*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

⁴⁶Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1680. Mention is made of a William Campbell who is listed as one of fifty-two persons who, it seems, had formed a company and were seeking to be recognized as proprietors of a new colony. There was a Mrs. C. K. D. Campbell registered with the Texas Veterans in 1893. She was then living at Burton, Texas. *Proceedings of the Convention of Texas Veterans*, 1893, 8-14.

⁴⁷*Application for Land*, Land Office, Austin, Texas. His application for land states that he came from Kentucky. Mr. Henry H. Taylor of Bedias, Texas, claims to be a grandson of John Conner and is positive that Conner came to Texas with the Zubers in 1830.

⁴⁸*Ibid.*

⁴⁹*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. See map in Appendix II.

⁵⁰Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 124.

⁵¹*Ibid.*, 369.

⁵²*Ibid.*, 392.

having served in the Texas army at the Battle of San Jacinto.⁵² Concerning the descendants of John C. Conner, the writer is confused. There are many Conners now in Grimes county and (at least some of them) seem certain to have descended from the colonist. To clearly trace the connection, however, has not been possible. As stated above, John C. Conner listed himself in 1832 as a widower with one daughter. The Conners here, however, insist that there were four children by the first marriage, the mother of whom was Fannie, daughter of Green McCullough. These children were Martha, L. A., Sylvester, and Reddie.⁵³ There were three children by a second marriage, namely: Ambrose, Mary, and James. Martha Conner (born 1844; died 1896) married G. B. Johnson (born 1838; died 1918), son of Ben Johnson who came to Texas from Alabama in 1868. B. G. Johnson is said to have served in Terry's Texas Rangers during the Civil War.⁵⁴ Two daughters were born to Martha and G. B. Johnson, namely: (Julia born 1870; died 1927), and Eva (born 1872; now living).⁵⁵

⁵²His name is listed in the *Index of Texas Revolutionary Heroes*, Archives Department, State Library, Austin, Texas.

⁵³Henry H. Taylor (See footnote number 46 above) says that his grandfather, John C. Conner, came to Texas with Abraham Zuber, Green McCullough, and Jim Johnson, in the year 1830, and that Conner settled in the vicinity of the Old Red Top community. This is near the location of the John C. Conner league patented in 1835.

⁵⁴This has not been verified by the writer.

⁵⁵*Henry H. Taylor to E. L. Blair*, August 3, 1928. Julia Johnson married J. M. Taylor of Madison county, by whom she had several children. Those living are, namely: Henry H., Lena (born 1893), Jim (born 1897), Tom, Linnie (born 1902), and Bessie (born 1905). Henry H. Taylor resides near Bedias, is married, and has five living children. His wife, before marriage, was Myrtle Cummings, daughter of Bob Cummings. Their children are, namely: Luther Murial (deceased), Jennie Marie, George Mavis, Robert C., and Joe Lou. Lena Taylor is now Mrs. G. R. Jackson of Bedias, and is the mother of three children, namely: Maxine, Doris, and Gil Gardner. Jim Taylor is married and living at Bedias. He has one child named Margie. Tom Taylor also lives at Bedias. He is married and has one child. Linnie Taylor is now Mrs. Cecil Thomas of Shiro, and Bessie is Mrs. Walter Coleman of Bedias. Eva Johnson, daughter of Martha,

L. A. Conner (born 1846; died 1911) is said to have been an ex-Confederate soldier. He married Reddie Suttle (died 1917), daughter of Mark Suttle, formerly of Walker county. Their children were as follows: Julia, John C., Sallie, Alfred, Mattie, Mance, Fred, Ora, Garvin, and Joe.⁵⁶ Sylvester Conner (born about 1848; died 1923) married Dee Suttle, sister to the wife of L. A. Conner, by whom he had two children, namely: Robert and Lula.⁵⁷ Ambrose Conner (born about 1873; died 1927) married Mary Simmons, who survives him

is now Mrs. W. W. Williamson of Bedias, and is the mother of six children, namely: Claude, Howard H., William W., Ethel, Jewel, and Rose. Claude Williamson died in youth. Howard H. Williamson is now connected with the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas, at College Station. He married Pearl Isbell, daughter of George Isbell, and they have two small children. William W. Williamson is unmarried and living at Bedias, Texas. He is a World War veteran. Ethel Williamson is now Mrs. Henry Cox of Hereford, Texas, and is the mother of two small children. Jewell Williamson is now Mrs. Charlie Cole. Rose Williamson is single and living at Bedias, Texas.

⁵⁶*Henry H. Taylor to E. L. Blair*, August 3, 1928. Julia Conner married Jim Bullard and is survived by her husband and six children, namely: Rad, Less (deceased), Lora, Ruby, Vernon, and another whose name the writer does not have. They all reside at Bedias, Texas, except Lora, who is now Mrs. Horace Arnold of Midway, Texas. Ruby is also married, being Mrs. John Wells of Bedias. Vernon is a daughter about eleven years of age. John C. Conner, son of L. A. Conner, married Ocie Plaster, daughter of H. F. Plaster of Bedias, Texas. They are living at Bedias, Texas. Sallie, sister of John C. Conner, married Jennie Goodrum, and now resides at Huntsville, and has five children, namely: Blueford, Sherman, Garvin, and two others, a son and a daughter, whose names the writer does not have. Mattie Conner, daughter of L. A. Conner, is now Mrs. R. L. McAdams of Bedias, and is the mother of four children, namely: Claude, L. A., Roger, and Geraldine. Mance Conner married Edna Donohoe, daughter of Anderson Donohoe of Huntsville, Texas. Fred and his wife now reside at Bedias. Ora Conner is now Mrs. R. B. Bullard of Madisonville and is the mother of three children, namely: Jarrell, Grady, and a daughter. Garvin Conner died in 1919. Joe Conner served in the 360th Infantry during the World War, and died unmarried in 1921.

⁵⁷*Ibid.*, Robert Conner (born 1885; died 1922) married Alver Wigley, who survives him and is now Mrs. Tom Nicklos of San Marcos, Texas. They had three sons, namely: Herman, R. S., and another whose name the writer does not have. All three are with their mother at San Marcos. Lula Conner, daughter of Sylvester, is now Mrs. Don Leach of Alabama and is the mother of two children, a son and a daughter.

and is living at Huntsville with their four children, namely: Zebb, Sylvester, Luther, and a daughter who is now Mrs. Jesse Pierce of Huntsville, Texas.⁵⁸ Mary Conner, sister to Ambrose, died at about eight years of age. James Conner is said to have served in Terry's Texas Rangers during the Civil War.⁵⁹ The writer has no record of his family. Reddie Conner, half sister to Ambrose and James, was born about 1851, and died about 1886. She married Jim Richey, an ex-Confederate soldier, by whom she had two children, namely: Marion and Leon.⁶⁰

James Cox.—The writer has found little information concerning James Cox. The Cox family and the Austins seem to have been intimately acquainted in Missouri as early as 1817. Among the Austin papers is a letter introducing Stephen F. Austin to Macdonald and Ridgely, merchants at Baltimore, dated December 9, 1817, at Herculaneum, Missouri, and signed by James Cox, Junior.⁶¹ This could hardly have been the James Cox who made application for land in Texas in 1830 as a member of Austin's colonial enterprise, for in this application, Cox gave his age as twenty-six years. He would therefore have been only thirteen years old at the time of the introduction cited above.⁶² There is also found in the Austin papers a receipt for land, signed by James Cox, Junior, and

⁵⁸Henry H. Taylor to E. L. Blair, August 3, 1928. Zebb Conner is married and lives at Huntsville with his wife and several children. Neither of the other boys are married and both reside at Huntsville. Both Sylvester and Luther were soldiers during the World War.

⁵⁹The writer has not verified this.

⁶⁰Henry H. Taylor to E. L. Blair, August 3, 1928. Marion Richey married Maude Jarrell, daughter of Bill Jarrell, and is living in Houston with his wife and two small children. Leon Richey now resides at Calvert and is about forty years of age.

⁶¹Barker, *The Austin Papers, Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 325.

⁶²*Application for Land*, 91. Texas Land Office, Austin, Texas.

dated December 12, 1818.⁶³ James Cox was married in 1830, his wife's name being Sarah, and her age twenty years.⁶⁴ They were granted one league of land, patent to which was dated May 28, 1832. This land is situated in the western portion of Grimes county.⁶⁵

Hanna Cornaugh.—No information concerning Mrs. Hanna Cornaugh has been found except that given in her application for land under date of December, 1828. Here she stated that she was a widow and gave her age as sixty-two years. She came to Texas from the state of Missouri, and brought with her three negro slaves.⁶⁶ Her league is situated a few miles north of the present town of Navasota, and borders the Navasota river on its east side. Her land patent was dated December 19, 1832.⁶⁷

William FitzGibbons.—William FitzGibbons came to Texas from the state of Louisiana in 1822 or prior thereto. In his application for land, dated in 1822, he states that he was possessed of a wife, Nancy, and three children, two sons and a daughter. He gave his age as forty-six years, and that of his wife as fifty years. By occupation he was a farmer.⁶⁸ His league is located in the northern part of Grimes county and was patented April 6, 1831.⁶⁹ His house was an official voting place in July, 1835.⁷⁰

⁶³Barker, *The Austin Papers, Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 334.

⁶⁴*Application for Land*, 91. Land Office, Austin, Texas.

⁶⁵*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. See map in Appendix II.

⁶⁶*Applications for Land*, 89. Land Office of Texas.

⁶⁷*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. See map in Appendix II.

⁶⁸*Applications for Land*, 71. In Texas Land Office. The name is spelled "Fitsgivens" in his grant, "Fitzgibbins" in his application, and "FitzGibbons" in *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*.

⁶⁹*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

⁷⁰*Quarterly of Texas State Historical Association*, X, 99.

Samuel Fulton.—Samuel Fulton came to Texas on a visit in 1824 from Alexandria, Louisiana. He was accompanied by Russel H. McWaters. They brought a letter of introduction to Stephen F. Austin signed by one J. Thomas, also of Alexandria. In this letter Thomas refers to Fulton as a young man and states that both Fulton and McWaters had numerous, wealthy, and respectable connections.⁷¹ Fulton was evidently favorably impressed with the situation in Texas for he made application for a league of land in 1828. He was then thirty-nine years old and had a wife and four daughters. His wife's christian name was given as Elizabeth. Her age was given as thirty-one years. None of the children were named in the record.⁷² The league granted Samuel Fulton is located in the southwest portion of Grimes county and was patented April 19, 1832.⁷³ No record is found of any living descendants of Samuel Fulton. It is very probable that he never really settled on his grant. It seems that he was dead before July 13, 1839, for on this date his patent was presented to the county court of Montgomery county by John Conner, and it was necessary to verify the signature of Samuel Fulton. Hugh McGuffin was appointed administrator, and one-fourth of the league was sold to Dickinson & Westcott, then of Montgomery county. The instrument of sale was dated July 13, 1839.⁷⁴

Claiborne Garrett.—Scant information has been obtained concerning Claiborne Garrett. There seems to be not even a record of his application for land. He received one-fourth of a league, located in the east-central part of Grimes county, patent to which is dated December 3, 1832.⁷⁵ His land grant

⁷¹Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 898.

⁷²*Application for Land*, 63. Texas Land Office Records.

⁷³*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. See map in Appendix II.

⁷⁴*Transcribed Deed Records of Montgomery County*, Vol. 83, page 100.

⁷⁵*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

shows that he was unmarried.⁷⁶ No mention is found of Claiborne Garrett in the Austin Papers. Several Garretts are mentioned, however, among whom may be cited, Charles Garrett, who resided in the settlement on the Brazos and Colorado in 1823.⁷⁷ There is also mentioned a Thomas W. Garrett. He was living in Mississippi in 1834, and was at that time making inquiry as to conditions in Texas.⁷⁸

Heirs of J. Gillett.—Four children constituted the J. Gillett heirs. Only three of them, Samuel S., Roswell, and Catherine, are named in the land grant.⁷⁹ Their mother's name was Hanna Gillett, and she had died sometime prior to 1827, the year during which the four children came to Texas from Missouri.⁸⁰ Their land application was dated in March, 1827.⁸¹ The one league grant is located in the southwestern part of Grimes county, the patent date being March 27, 1831.⁸²

Franklin Jarvis Greenwood.—A large family of Greenwoods came to Texas from Arkansas about the year 1830. The family consisted of an aged father, Henry Bailey Greenwood (born 1749; died at Grimes Prairie, April 11, 1835), his wife, Nancy, formerly Nancy Jarvis (died at Grimes Prairie in 1836), five sons and four daughters, namely: Franklin Jarvis, Joe, Caliph, John, Acsah, Emma, Betsey, and two others whose names the writer does not have, one of whom, a daughter, married a man by the name of Ben Pool, the other

⁷⁶*Land Grants*, VI, 1974. Texas Land Office Records.

⁷⁷Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 686 and 772.

⁷⁸*Ibid.*, II, 1064.

⁷⁹*Texas Land Grants*, III, 278, Texas Land Office.

⁸⁰*Ibid.*, also Land Application, in General Land Office.

⁸¹*Land Applications*, 83. General Land Office of Texas.

⁸²*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

being a son, about whom the writer has no information.⁸³ The Greenwoods were typical American frontiersmen. Henry Bailey Greenwood was in Virginia in 1807. By 1811 he had moved to Illinois and from here, in 1821, he began a series of migrations to the southwest, through Kentucky, Tennessee, Mississippi, and Arkansas, from which state he came to Texas, where, in 1830, he is found, with his two sons, Franklin Jarvis and Joel, settled in what is now the Grimes Prairie community of Grimes county.⁸⁴ Of the sons and daughters of Henry Bailey Greenwood, only Franklin Jarvis and Joel made permanent settlement in Grimes county territory.⁸⁵ Franklin Jarvis Greenwood (born September 4, 1804; died at Stoneham, Texas, on July 3, 1882) made application for land in 1830. In his application he gave his occupation as farming, his age as twenty-six years. He gave his wife's name as Mary Jane, and her age as twenty-two years, and stated that they came to Texas from Arkansas.⁸⁶ Patent to his land was dated April 7, 1831.⁸⁷ Mrs. Franklin Jarvis Greenwood was formerly Miss Mary Jane Montgomery (born May 22, 1808; died

⁸³Dates and names taken from the *Greenwood Family Bible*, now in possession of Mrs. Annie Keyser, Stoneham, Texas.

⁸⁴This information was taken from an unsigned, undated manuscript, written by a Mr. Bush, a great-grandson of Henry Bailey Greenwood. Bush is supposed to have gotten his date from Franklin B. Greenwood, grandson of Henry Bailey Greenwood. The manuscript is now in the possession of Mrs. John W. Greenwood of Houston, Texas.

⁸⁵Caliph Greenwood, it seems, never came to Grimes Prairie. One of his sons was named Jafeth Greenwood. Jafeth lived for a time near Bedias in Grimes county, but later moved into west Texas. John Greenwood and the other son, whose name is not known, also settled in west Texas. Acsah Greenwood married Moses Quick, a river captain in Illinois and never came to Texas. Emma Greenwood married a Mr. Larrison. They settled in Madison county. Betsey Greenwood married Bob Ray who had a grant of land near Anderson vicinity. She had formerly been married to a Mr. Henson. These statements are based upon information received from Mrs. Annie Keyser, Stoneham, Texas; Mrs. John W. Greenwood, Houston, Texas; and the Greenwood Family Bible.

⁸⁶*Applications for Land*, 81. Texas Land Office.

⁸⁷*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

April 10, 1880), daughter of William Montgomery of the state of Tennessee, in which state she married Franklin Jarvis, prior to their migration to Texas. They had ten children, all of whom were born in Texas, namely: William Montgomery (born June 24, 1830; died October 31, 1888), Nancy Caroline (born March 20, 1832; died April 18, 1863), Dr. Thomas Benton (born January 14, 1834; died March 26, 1880), Elizabeth Eveline (born December 14, 1835; died April 18, 1926), Sarah Emaline (born May 7, 1838; died in October, 1905), Mary Anne (born February 18, 1840; died July 20, 1856), Benjamin Franklin (born May 20, 1841; died September 27, 1844), Harriet Ewing (born September 15, 1843; died July 28, 1856), Franklin Bailey (born May 15, 1846; died April 9, 1919), and John W. (born December 13, 1849), now living at Plantersville, Texas.⁸⁸ William Montgomery Greenwood lived the whole of his life in Grimes county. He was a farmer by occupation, but late in life, tried his hand at teaching school in his home community. When the Civil War broke out, he enlisted and served for a time at least, with DeBray's Regiment stationed near Galveston.⁸⁹ On September 18, 1853, he married Nancy Hobbs (born November 16, 1834; died January 1, 1898), daughter of Edward Hobbs who then resided on Fuqua's Prairie, in Grimes county. Eight children

⁸⁸*Greenwood Family Bible*, now in the possession of Mrs. Annie Keyser at Stoneham, Texas. The writer is greatly indebted to Mr. Robert Ewing Greenwood for his assistance in securing data regarding the Greenwood family. Robert Ewing Greenwood (born June 21, 1911) is a son of Mr. R. E. Greenwood, now of Navasota, Texas; and grandson of Franklin Bailey Greenwood, the son of Franklin Jarvis, who secured land as one of Austin's colonists in 1830. As a senior thesis in high school history, Robert Ewing, working with the writer, prepared a *History of the Greenwoods*. Young Robert Ewing Greenwood was the honor graduate of the Navasota high school in 1929. He is now (1930) a student at the University of Texas.

⁸⁹Greenwood, Robert E., Junior, *History of the Greenwoods* (MS.). Mrs. John W. Greenwood, who resides at Plantersville, Grimes county, is cited for the statement concerning the Civil War service of William Montgomery Greenwood.

were born to this couple, namely: Edward, Charlie, Mary, James, Eveline, Lee, Eugene, and Annie.⁹⁰ Nancy Caroline Greenwood married James Lawrence, July 1, 1851. James Lawrence came to Texas from the state of Kentucky, but was originally from England. He was a Civil War veteran.⁹¹ Nancy Caroline and James Lawrence had three children, two

⁹⁰Greenwood, Robert E., Junior, *History of the Greenwoods* (MS.). Edward Greenwood (died February 17, 1911) married Ella Williams, October 31, 1883, by whom he had four children, namely: Fred (born September 2, 1884), Earnest, Ruby (born 1889), and Reed (born 1895). Fred Greenwood now resides at Navasota. He married Maggie Spann (born October 26, 1886), daughter of C. P. Spann of Navasota, Texas. They have one son, Conlaw Edward, now about thirteen years old. Ruby Greenwood is now Mrs. George N. Cook of Brenham, Texas, and is the mother of two children. Reed Greenwood now resides at Shiro, Grimes county. He married Vivian Leonard. Charlie Greenwood, son of Wm. Montgomery Greenwood, died unmarried. Mary Greenwood, sister to Charlie, was the late Mrs. Will Williams of the Apolonia community, Grimes county. She had two children, namely: Jim E., and Annie Lela. Both of them are now dead. Jim E. Williams, however, married and is survived by his wife and two children who are living at Wills Point, Texas. James Greenwood, brother to Mary, married Addie Kennard, by whom he has three children, namely: Ethel, Charlie, and George. This family now resides in Waller county. Eveline Greenwood, daughter of Wm. Montgomery, was born April 16, 1864. She is now Mrs. Horace Williams of Jacksonville, Texas, and is the mother of four children, namely: Grace, George, Horace, and Angus. Lee Greenwood, son of William Montgomery Greenwood, was born on May 6, 1866, and died February 24, 1906. He married a Miss Lavinia of Dallas, Texas, but died without children. Eugene Greenwood (born October 13, 1868; died December 29, 1903) married December 19, 1900, Eugene Womack, daughter of Abe Womack, who then resided in the Apolonia community. Mrs. Eugene Greenwood survived her husband, after whose death she married Walter Greenwood, cousin to her first husband, with whom she now lives at Plantersville, Grimes county. There were two children of Eugene Greenwood, namely: Abe and Harold. Abe Greenwood now resides at Houston. Harold died in infancy. Annie Greenwood is now Mrs. Will Keyser of Stoneham, Texas. She was born January 26, 1872. There is one son, George Keyser, who is married and living at Stoneham. His wife was formerly Mary Neelly, daughter of J. A. Neelly.

⁹¹*Ibid.* There was a James Greenwood in the Texas army at San Jacinto. He belonged to Company A, First Regiment of Texas Volunteers, having joined the army in December of 1835. McDonald, *Soldiers of San Jacinto* (MS), 192. The writer has no information about this James Greenwood.

of whom died young. The other was named Addie.⁹² Thomas Benton Greenwood was a physician and Civil War veteran, having served with the DeBray Regiment with the rank of chief surgeon. He resided at Stoneham, Grimes county, where he practiced his profession until his death in 1880. He had never married.⁹³ Elizabeth Eveline Greenwood married John Stoneham on October 20, 1853.⁹⁴ They had fourteen children, six of whom, however, died in early youth. The eight to reach adulthood were, namely: Joseph F., George Crowder, John O., David, Erastus, Sebron, Thomas Benton,

⁹²Greenwood, *History of the Greenwoods* (MS.). Addie Lawrence was married twice. Her first husband being Andy Montgomery, by whom she had two children, namely: Lawrence, and Bert; her second husband being John McMurrrough, by whom she had five children, namely: John, Frank, Pat, Bob, and Addie (a son). John McMurrrough is now living somewhere in Massachusetts. Bob has a family and lives in Arkansas. Pat is dead. The writer has no information about the other children of Addie Lawrence.

⁹³*Ibid.*

⁹⁴John Stoneham (born 1829; died 1894) came to Texas from Conecuh county, Alabama, in the summer of 1844. With him came an uncle, George Stoneham (born 1786; died 1868), and three brothers, namely: George (born 1824; died 1874), Henry (born 1832), and Joe (born 1833; died 1864). The four young Stoneham brothers were orphaned sons of Joseph and Rebecca Stoneham, both of whom had died in the year 1836, leaving George Stoneham, uncle to the boys, and brother of Joseph, their father, as guardian to the children and administrator of the estate of Joseph Stoneham. This estate consisted of a plantation near Brooklyn, Alabama, and a number of negro slaves. In the year 1845, another party of Stonehams came to Texas, from Jackson county, Georgia. The party was composed of four brothers of the elder George Stoneham (uncles to John Stoneham), namely: Henry (born 1791; died 1884), John (born 1795), Erastus (died 1887), and Bryant (born 1809; died 1896). With these came a sister, Savannah (Susan) Stoneham (born 1790; died 1887), and an aged mother, Jane Stoneham (born 1753; died 1858). The descendants of these Stoneham pioneers are numerous and form one of the most influential connections in Grimes county today. The writer has much more data about the family, but it cannot be given here. (Philipia Stoneham, *History of the Stoneham Family*, a manuscript prepared in connection with an American History course given by the writer in the Navasota high school, in 1929. Miss Philipia Stoneham based much of her essay upon an undated manuscript written by G. M. Crittenden of Houston, Texas. The Crittenden manuscript was in the nature of a biographical sketch of the Stoneham family.)

and Henry.⁹⁵ Sarah Emaline Greenwood, fifth child of Mary Jane and Franklin Jarvis Greenwood, married James L. Lawrence, widower of her older sister, Nancy, by whom she had two children, namely: Eveline and Grace (died October 17,

⁹⁵Greenwood, *History of the Greenwoods* (MS.). Joseph Stoneham (died July 14, 1923) married Clara Houser, by whom he had five children, namely: George S., Ed S., Wyatt, Mary, and Ollie. George S. Stoneham is now married and lives in Missouri. Ed S. and Ollie Stoneham both reside in Houston. Wyatt Stoneham resides at Navasota, Texas. He is married and has four children, namely: Clara Sue, Mary, Ruby, and Worth. Mary Stoneham, sister of Wyatt, resides in Missouri. George Crowder Stoneham, son of John and Eveline Elizabeth Stoneham, now resides in the Yarboro community of Grimes county. He married Belle Martin, daughter of John F. Martin, by whom he had six children, namely: Bernice (born July 26, 1888), Maud (born August 25, 1890), Fulton (born March 3, 1892), John, Alice (born August 1, 1895), and Doris. All of these now reside at Yarboro with their parents except Doris, who is married, being now Mrs. Hardy. John O. Stoneham (born April 29, 1858; died May 28, 1906) is survived by his widow (Maggie Haynie before marriage) and five children, namely: Haynie (born July 4, 1881; died October 4, 1921), Hal B., Claude, Roy, and Ervin. Haynie Stoneham married Lillian Hill, daughter of Reuben Hill, and is survived by two children, namely: John and Gordon; both of whom reside at Stoneham, in Grimes county. Two other children died in childhood. Hal B. Stoneham now resides at Navasota, Texas, where he is practicing law. He married, April 10, 1905, Emma Ludwig, daughter of Anton Ludwig, then of Sealy, Texas. They have three children, namely: Ruth, Elliot, and Hal B. Ruth is the only one who is now married, she being now Mrs. James E. Jackson of Oklahoma. Claude Stoneham, brother of Hal B. Stoneham, is now a farmer near Stoneham, Grimes county. Roy, twin to Claude, also resides at Stoneham. Ervin Stoneham married Myrtle Barry, daughter of W. H. Barry of Navasota, Texas, and they have one daughter, Margaret (born January 31, 1918). David Stoneham, son of Eveline Elizabeth and John Stoneham, is now living at Stoneham, Grimes county. He married Hallie Fowler (born November 10, 1873; died October 7, 1903) by whom he had one child, Hallie, who now resides at Brownwood, Texas. He later married Nellie Winn, by whom he has one daughter, Dora Evelyn, now about seven years of age. Erastus Stoneham, son of John and Eveline Elizabeth Stoneham, now lives at Stoneham. He married Elizabeth Fowler, sister to Hallie mentioned above, by whom he has one child, Elenor (born October 18, 1899), now Mrs. L. E. Bartlett of San Antonio, Texas. Sebron Stoneham, brother of Erastus, is living at Stoneham. He married, December 10, 1899, Alma Crittenden, daughter of G. S. Crittenden of Stoneham. They have seven children, all of whom are with their parents, namely: Herbert (born March 25, 1901), Russell, Howard, Evelyn, Lucile, Lloyd, and Oliver. Thomas Benton Stoneham, son of John and Eveline Elizabeth Stoneham, married, April 26, 1903, Annie Crittenden, sister to Alma mentioned above. They reside at Stoneham, and have a family of seven children, namely: Robert, Francis (born

1900).⁹⁶ Mary Anne Greenwood, Benjamin Franklin, and Harriet Ewing Greenwood, all children of Franklin Jarvis Greenwood, died in early youth.⁹⁷ Franklin Bailey Greenwood, ninth child of Franklin Jarvis Greenwood, resided at Stoneham, Grimes county, until late in life, then moved to Navasota, where he died in 1919. He served in the Nineteenth Legislature of Texas as a member of the Lower House.⁹⁸ During the Civil War, rather during the latter part of this war, he served in Green's Brigade; such service being for the last seventeen months of the war, he being too young to enlist at the beginning of the War.⁹⁹ On July 18, 1871, Franklin Bailey Greenwood married Annie R. Dunham (born March 1, 1852; died October 8, 1905), a daughter of John and Rotilda Dunham who then resided in the Wallace Prairie community of Grimes county.¹⁰⁰ Franklin Bailey Greenwood

December 12, 1907), Philipia (born October 30, 1911), Lois (born April 14, 1914), Thomas (born March 3, 1917), Wendall (born November 2, 1921) and Randolph (born January 22, 1927). All of these are with their parents except Robert, who married Ruth Sullivan of Houston, Texas, and resides at Plantersville, Texas. He has one small daughter, Bobbie Ruth. Henry Stoneham, is now a minister and resides in Virginia, at Red Hill. He has a family of several children, namely: Camp, John, Kathrine, Henry B., Junior, Virginia, and Roberta. None of these are married.

⁹⁶*Mrs. R. M. Thompson to Robert E. Greenwood, Junior, August 3, 1928.*

⁹⁷*Greenwood Family Bible.*

⁹⁸*Election Register of State and County Officers* in the office of the Secretary of State, Austin, Texas.

⁹⁹Greenwood, Robert E., Junior, *History of the Greenwoods*, MS. The writer has not verified this. Robert Greenwood is a grandson of Franklin Bailey Greenwood.

¹⁰⁰This John Dunham is said to have been a younger brother of the Robert Holmes Dunham, who, as a member of the Mier Expedition, was executed by the Mexicans at Salado, Mexico, in 1843. Below is a copy of a letter said to have been written by Robert Holmes Dunham, the original of which is at the Alamo in San Antonio, Texas. A photostat copy is in the possession of Mrs. Henry N. Sandall of Navasota, Texas.

"MEXICO"

"Dear Mother

I write to you under the most awful feelings that a son ever addressed a mother for in half an hour my doom will be finished on earth for I am doomed to die

was the father of eight children, namely: Josie Frank, William Wood (born August 23, 1874), Franklin Jarvis (born September 7, 1876; died November 16, 1900), Robert Ewing (born February 27, 1879), Thomas Benton (born March 5, 1884), Hannibal Boone (born September 1, 1886; died March 5, 1914), Grace (born March 5, 1884), and Annie Dunham (born 1889).¹⁰¹ John W. Greenwood, tenth and

by the hands of the Mexicans for our late attempt to escape the (blot) . . . G. Santa Anna that every tenth man should be shot we drew lots I was one of the unfortunates. I cannot say anything more I die I hope with firmness farewell may god bless you and may he in this my last hour forgive and pardon all my sins.

A. D. Hendinberge will should he be . . . (blot) . . . to inform you farewell
Your affectionate son

(Signed) R. H. Dunham."

¹⁰¹Greenwood, Robert E., Junior, *History of the Greenwoods* (MS). Young Greenwood was assisted in this work by several older members of the family. Especial mention should be made of the following: Mrs. John W. Greenwood of Houston, Texas; Mr. Thomas Benton Greenwood of San Antonio, Texas; Mrs. W. W. Greenwood of Navasota, Texas; Mrs. H. N. Sandall of Navasota, Texas; Mrs. Annie Keyser of Stoneham, Texas; and Mrs. Robert E. Greenwood of Navasota, Texas. Concerning the descendants of Franklin Bailey Greenwood, Josie Frank Greenwood died young. William Wood Greenwood is now a prominent physician at Navasota, Texas, where he is considered one of the outstanding citizens. He married, October 26, 1902, Nancy Montgomery (born February 22, 1882), daughter of Dr. J. T. Montgomery. They have three children, namely; William M. (born August 6, 1903), Helen (born September 2, 1907), and Aubrey (born December 29, 1915). William M. Greenwood is now a practicing physician in Houston, Texas. Helen is a student in Baylor University, at Waco, Texas; and Aubrey is with her parents at Navasota. Franklin Jarvis Greenwood, Junior, died unmarried in 1900. Robert Ewing Greenwood now resides at Navasota, Texas where he is connected with the Citizen's National Bank. He married on June 29, 1910 to Lula Lewis (born October 17, 1883), daughter of George W. Lewis, Junior. They have two children, namely: Robert Ewing (born June 21, 1911), and Mary Ellen (born June 23, 1915). Robert Ewing Greenwood, Junior, has been mentioned several times above as having helped the writer in the preparation of this sketch of the Greenwood family. Thomas Benton Greenwood (born October 4, 1881) is now a druggist in San Antonio, Texas. He was married, April 30, 1907, to Wincie Ingram (born July 27, 1885), daughter of J. A. Ingram of Henderson, Texas. They have one daughter, Martha Francis (born November 22, 1911) who is now (1928) a student in the University of Texas. Grace Greenwood (born March 5, 1884) is now Mrs. J. H. Speed of Houston, Texas. She is a widow with one daughter, Annie Elizabeth. Hannibal Boone Greenwood died unmarried. Annie Dunham Greenwood is now Mrs. Henry Naul Sandall of Navasota, Texas, and is the mother of one son, Henry Naul Sandall, Junior. Her husband, H. N.

youngest child of Franklin Jarvis Greenwood, is now a retired farmer in the Plantersville community of Grimes county. He was married on December 5, 1876, to Anna Devereaux (born July 21, 1859), daughter of Ben F. Devereaux of Plantersville, Grimes county. They have eight children, namely: Stella (born September 19, 1877), Benjamin (born May 27, 1879), Mary (born in 1881), Walter (born March 25, 1883), Lena (born in 1885), Alfred (born May 28, 1887), Louise, and Vivian.¹⁰²

Joel Greenwood.—Joel Greenwood was another son of Henry Bailey Greenwood who acquired land in what is now Grimes county. He lived only a few years after coming to Texas, and has no living descendants. He married Anna Montgomery, sister to Mary Jane, wife of Franklin Jarvis Greenwood. They were married in Tennessee. At the time of his application for land in Texas (1830), Joel gave his age as

Sandall, is in charge of the Missouri Pacific Railroad interests at Navasota and is influential in the commercial life of the community. The father of Henry N. Sandall was Henry L. Sandall. His mother was Martha Elizabeth Sandall (born July 9, 1853; died March 10, 1929), a daughter of John Lindley.

¹⁰²*Mrs. John W. Greenwood to Robert E. Greenwood, Junior*, dated at Houston, Texas, August 6, 1928. Stella Greenwood is now Mrs. Charles Womack of Houston, Texas, and is the mother of one son, Charlie, now about fourteen years of age. Benjamin Greenwood married Carrie Hardesty on January 11, 1910. They reside at Houston, and have two sons, namely: Benjamin, and Richard, now about fifteen and thirteen years old, respectively. Mary Greenwood resides in New York City and is unmarried. Walter Greenwood is now a merchant at Plantersville, Grimes county. He married, April 22, 1910, Mrs. Eugene Greenwood, widow of Eugene Greenwood. They have no children. Lena Greenwood is now Mrs. R. B. Montgomery of El Paso, Texas. Her husband is the youngest son of Dr. J. T. Montgomery of Navasota, Texas. They have three small children, namely: Dixie, Anna Ruth, and Richard. Alfred Greenwood is now a farmer in the Plantersville community of Grimes county. He married, in 1921, Virginia Forrester, daughter of H. R. Forrester of the lola community. They have four small children, namely: Anna Isabell, Virginia, John Alfred, and Mary. Louise Greenwood now resides at Plantersville, Texas. Her sister, Vivian Greenwood, now lives at Houston, Texas. Neither Louise nor Vivian are married.

twenty-eight years and that of his wife as eighteen years.¹⁰³ Joel and Anna Greenwood had two sons, namely: Henry and William M., both of whom died unmarried. The writer has little information about either of these sons. William M. Greenwood was a deaf mute. Joel Greenwood was survived by his wife, who later married Dr. Tucker, by whom she had two daughters, Sallie and Lou, both of whom died unmarried.¹⁰⁴

Darius Gregg.—The writer has found no information concerning Darius Gregg except that he was granted a quarter league of land under date of April 6, 1831.¹⁰⁵ The land is situated in the central portion of Grimes county near the present town of Anderson.¹⁰⁶ Gregg was unmarried at the time the grant was made.¹⁰⁷

Jesse Grimes.—Jesse Grimes was born in Dublin county, North Carolina, February 6, 1788. He was a son of Sampson Grimes (born in Virginia, August 10, 1749) and Bethsheba Grimes (born July 3, 1756), a daughter of John and Ann Winder of the state of Maryland. Young Jesse Grimes left North Carolina in 1817 and moved into Alabama, from which state he came to Texas, arriving at the Sabine river in December of 1826. He settled first on the San Jacinto river, at a point about ten miles above its junction with Buffalo Bayou. He remained here only about one year, for in the fall of 1827, he settled in what is now Grimes county in what soon came to be known as Grimes Prairie community. Here he engaged in farming and stock raising.

¹⁰³*Land Applications*, 87, General Land Office of Texas

¹⁰⁴*Greenwood Family Bible*, also Robert Ewing Greenwood, Junior. *History of the Greenwoods* (MS).

¹⁰⁵*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

¹⁰⁶See map in Appendix.

¹⁰⁷*Texas Land Grants*, IV, 714. Texas Land Office.

His, however, was not a typical southern plantation. He gave little attention to cotton but seems to have done diversified farming. He was a slave owner but seems never to have been very enthusiastic for the institution. He never owned more than three or four slaves at one time, and when the question of secession came up, Grimes took the same attitude as did Sam Houston.¹⁰⁸ Few men took greater interest in the political affairs of that period than did Jesse Grimes. He was elected *sindico* of the precinct of Viesca, December 19, 1830.¹⁰⁹ In the following year, he was elected *regidor* of the *ayuntamiento* of San Felipe de Austin.¹¹⁰ Jesse Grimes was a member of the Consultation in 1835.¹¹¹ This body appointed him to serve as a member of the General Council, in November of 1835, and while in the General Council he was one of the committee on Land and Indian Affairs.¹¹² Jesse Grimes was also a member of the General Convention of March, 1836,¹¹³ and his name appears among the signers of the Declaration of Independence proclaimed March 17, 1836.¹¹⁴ He also signed the first Constitution of the Republic of Texas, adopted March 17, 1836.¹¹⁵ Grimes continued an active participant in the affairs of the Republic of Texas, serving as a member of the Senate in the First and Ninth

¹⁰⁸*Grimes to Cordova, Esq.*, dated March 26, 1857. Now in the possession of Mrs. W. C. Preston, Fort Worth, Texas. Mrs. W. C. Preston is a granddaughter of Jesse Grimes. The writer is indebted to her for much of the above information.

¹⁰⁹Barker, "Minutes of the *Ayuntamiento* of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXIII, 214.

¹¹⁰*Ibid.*, XXIV, 162.

¹¹¹Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 544.

¹¹²*Ibid.*, 561. Gammel gives two other men as having been on this committee, namely: Martin and Parmer. Dr. E. C. Barker, however, is of the opinion that this is a mistake and that there was only one man, namely: Martin Parmer.

¹¹³*Ibid.*, 824.

¹¹⁴*Ibid.*

¹¹⁵*Ibid.*, 1085.

Congress,¹¹⁶ and as a member of the House in the Sixth, Seventh, and Eighth.¹¹⁷ After Texas became a state, Grimes continued as a member of the Senate in all legislatures except the fifth down to the year 1857.¹¹⁸ Politically, Jesse Grimes was affiliated with the Democratic Party. As stated above, however, he was opposed to secession.¹¹⁹ In a letter to J. De Cordova, Esq., dated March 26, 1857, Grimes comments upon his public career as follows:

"I was appointed by the Legislature of North Carolina, a justice of the peace and qualified Jan'y 1813 which office I held until the fall of 1817 when I emigrated to Alabama. In Jan'y 1819, I was appointed a justice of the peace for Washington county, Alabama, under the territorial government. On the Organization of the State Government, I was elected clerk of the county court of Washington county which office I held until the fall of 1826, when I emigrated to Texas. I was likewise elected a justice of the peace which office I held for four years. I also held the office of Post Master at Washington C. H. for about three years. I then resigned. In 1829, I was elected Lieutenant under Captain Abner Kay Kendal the first attempt to organize a militia in Texas the only office I ever held that gives me claim to military title. In 1832 I was elected Regidore of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin. This being the year of the first opening of hostilities between Texas and Mexico (Fredonian War excepted) and the Ayuntamiento being the organ of communication with the government, we had stirring times. In 1835, I was elected to the Consultation and remained in the Council, during the second week I was taken sick, left the Council and did not return to it again. I was in the Convention of 1836 and in the Senate of the first Congress. When Montgomery county was created in 1837 I was elected Chief Justice which office I held until the first of Jan'y 1840 when I resigned. I was elected to the House of Repre-

¹¹⁶*Grimes to Cordova*, dated March 26, 1857.

¹¹⁷*Ibid.*, also Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 1333.

¹¹⁸*Grimes to Cordova*, dated March 26, 1857.

¹¹⁹*Mrs. W. C. Preston to E. L. Blair*, dated August 25, 1928.

sentatives of the 6th., 7th., and 8th. Congresses and to the Senate of the 9th Congress.

"I have had the honor of a seat in the Senate of all of the State Legislatures except the fifth. These are the several offices that I have held. I beg your pardon, I had forgotten the office of Judge to which I was appointed by the Congress of Coahuila and Texas in 1835. This office was nominal. Nobody wanted to be judged. The Texans were like the Israelites when they had no king. Every man done what seemed good in his own eyes.

"But the commission certainly justified the honorable title connected therewith.

"Politically I have ever claimed to be a Democrat but it has been alleged that I am rather of the old fogey order."

Jesse Grimes was married twice. His first wife's maiden name was Martha Smith (born August 4, 1879, in Alabama) who died in 1824. They were married in 1813 and nine children were born to the union, namely: Robert Henry (born October 12, 1814), Harriet Elizabeth (born August 20, 1816), Alfred Calvin (born December 30, 1817), who was killed in the Alamo in 1836,¹²⁰ Rufus (born July 23, 1819), Lucinda (born October 15, 1820; died in early childhood), Jacob (born March 28, 1822; died 1855), Mary Jane (born May 5, 1823; died in early childhood), William Ward (born November 16, 1824; died in early childhood), and Martha Ann (born November 16, 1824), twin to William Ward. The second marriage of Jesse Grimes was to Miss Rosanna Ward Britton (born December 31, 1803; died in Grimes county, December 6, 1870), whom he married in Alabama in the year 1826. She was a daughter of Frances and Mary (Ward) Britton, who had immigrated to Alabama from South Carolina. There were six children born to this second marriage, namely: Gordon

¹²⁰Williams, *Siege and Fall of the Alamo*, 200 (MS). Miss Williams verifies this by certificate in Land Office of Texas.

(born November 28, 1829; died in early childhood), Harvey (born June 14, 1831; died at age of twenty-three years), Leonard (died in childhood), Helen (February 13, 1835), Emily (born June 10, 1838), and Nancy (born April 25, 1840).¹²¹ The writer has found that in spite of the large family reared by Jesse Grimes, there are very few descendants now living. None have been located by the name of Grimes. Mrs. W. C. Preston, now of Fort Worth, Texas, was formerly Miss Anna Ehlinger. Her mother was Nancy Grimes, who was the youngest daughter of Jesse Grimes by his second wife. Mrs. W. C. Preston seems the best authority on the present whereabouts of the descendants of Jesse Grimes.¹²² The unusual fatality in the family is said to have been caused by tuberculosis.¹²³

Jared E. Groce.—In the fall of 1821, Stephen F. Austin's first colony of three hundred families began to arrive in Texas. Two of these American pioneers are known to have estab-

¹²¹Mrs. W. C. Preston to E. L. Blair, dated August, 1928. "Obituary of Charles H. Ehlinger," *Navasota Weekly Review*, August 5, 1897.

¹²²Of the above children of Jesse Grimes who lived to manhood and womanhood, it is known that Harriet Grimes married a man by the name of Perry and lived near Marlin, Texas. Rufus Grimes married in Alabama in 1815, and after his first wife's death, he married Martha Berryman, daughter of William Berryman, of Grimes county. There were several children, all of whom are now dead. Only one son of Rufus Grimes lived to marry. This one was named Henry. There is a little grandson of Henry Grimes now living. His name is Arthur Harbuck. He is about ten years of age. (This information was given to the writer by Mrs. W. S. D. Saunders of Navasota, Texas. She did not know where Arthur now resides.) Jacob Grimes died unmarried. Helen Grimes married a Mr. Love but died without issue. Emily Grimes married twice, first to John Bowen, and later to a Mr. Gannaway. There were no children by either marriage. Nancy Grimes married (1859) Charles H. Ehlinger (died August 4, 1897) at Grimes Prairie, in Grimes county. They had five children, namely: Ida Harris, now Mrs. Ben Harris of Fort Worth, Texas; Jesse, now Mrs. Joseph Ward of Houston, Texas; Anna, now Mrs. W. C. Preston of Fort Worth, Texas; George, now married and living at Brownwood, Texas; Lillian, another daughter, died in infancy. (Data given in this footnote was given to the writer by Mrs. W. C. Preston, and Mrs. W. S. D. Saunders.)

¹²³Mrs. W. S. D. Saunders to E. L. Blair, in personal conference.

lished themselves, as early as 1821, in the territory which afterwards became Grimes county.¹²⁴ One was Andrew Millican, a ranchman from Millican Bend, Arkansas; the other was Jared Ellison Groce, a wealthy planter and slave owner from Fort Groce, Alabama.¹²⁵ Millican remained only one winter within the limits of present Grimes county. He sold out to the Hollands in 1822 and moved into what is now Brazos county, there establishing the settlement now known as Millican.¹²⁶ The career of Jared E. Groce is a good example of that of the American pioneer of the South during the period of the westward expansion of the plantation system. His father was Jared Ellison Groce I, who had emigrated to North Carolina from England in 1760, with one or more brothers. Jared E. Groce I married Sarah Sheppard in 1767, moving soon thereafter to Halifax county, Virginia. Here Jared Ellison Groce II was born, October 12, 1782. The Groce brothers disagreed on the question of American Independence, Jared E. Groce I espoused the cause of the colonies, joined the American army under Washington, and changed the spelling of his name from "Gross" to "Groce." In 1787, Jared Ellison Groce II migrated from Virginia to Lincoln county, Georgia. In his new location, he became actively identified with political affairs, serving as a delegate to the convention that framed the State Constitution of Georgia in

¹²⁴Zuber, W. P., *Eighty Years in Texas*. In manuscript form in the State Library, Austin, Texas.

¹²⁵Bugbee, "The Old Three Hundred," *Texas Historical Association Quarterly*, I, 108-117 (1897). There were eight of the first three hundred to secure land grants wholly or partly situated in present Grimes county. They were Jared E. Groce, Francis Holland, William Holland, Isaac Jackson, Caleb Wallace, Boland Whitesides, Henry Whitesides, and James Whitesides. The last three named had grants partly situated in what is now Brazos county.

¹²⁶Zuber, W. P., *Eighty Years in Texas*.

1798.¹²⁸ From Georgia, Groce moved into Alabama in 1814, and settled on the Alabama river, where he established what came to be known as Fort Groce. In 1821, while in New Orleans, he became interested in the colonial scheme of Stephen F. Austin. Upon his return to Alabama, he disposed of his land and began active preparation for the trip to Texas. He arrived in Texas, as stated above, in the fall of 1821, established himself on the east bank of the Brazos river, at a point in the vicinity of the present town of Hempstead. He was granted ten sitios of land by the Mexican government.¹²⁹ This large acreage was granted "on account of the property he has brought with him."¹³⁰ This property consisted chiefly of a great number of negro slaves.¹³¹ Commenting upon the trip to Texas, Mrs. Berlet says:

¹²⁷Berleth, Mrs. Rosa Groce, "Jared E. Groce," *Quarterly*, XX, 358. The author's real name is Mrs. Sarah Wharton Groce Berlet, and she lives at 1409, Indiana Street, Houston, Texas. It will be noticed that both names are used in the following pages, because the writer uses the name used by Mrs. Sarah Wharton Groce Berlet in whatever particular work being cited.

¹²⁸Berlet, Mrs. Sarah Wharton Groce, *Groce and Kindred Families*. This is an unpublished manuscript in the possession of Mrs. Berlet, who is great-granddaughter of Jared E. Groce II. Her book has been prepared for members of the family rather than for publication, and for such a work, is unusually authentic. Numerous citations to court records are included. Maps and drawings show the location and arrangement of the various Groce plantations. The above statement regarding the revolutionary activities of Jared E. Groce, grandson of Jared E. Groce I. The archives of the state of Georgia are cited as authority for the statement that Groce was a member of the Georgia constitutional convention. Also *Historical Collections of the Joseph Habersham Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution*, I, 302.

¹²⁹Bugbee, "The Old Three Hundred," *Texas Historical Association Quarterly*, I, 108-113. This land was situated as follows: five sitios in Brazoria county, patented, July 29, 1824; two sitios in Waller county, patented, July 29, 1824; and three sitios in Grimes county, patented, July 29, 1824.

¹³⁰*Ibid.*

¹³¹Groce, William W., "John A. Wharton," *Quarterly*, XIX, 272. There appears a note by the editors citing *Spanish Titles*, I, 258. General Land Office, as authority for the statement that Groce brought with him ninety slaves.

"The next few weeks [after his return from Louisiana in 1821] were spent in buying equipment, such as farming implements, tools, seeds, etc., and when they left Alabama, the procession was more like a caravan than anything else. Mr. Alfred Gee, the overseer who had served with him [Groce] in Georgia, had charge of several hundred negroes. [According to his application for land, Groce had only ninety slaves when he came to Texas.] There were fifty or more covered wagons in which the women and children traveled; the men, most of them on horseback, horses, mules, cows, sheep, hogs, came next; then came more wagons containing furniture, spinning wheels, looms, provisions, etc. Colonel Groce and his son, Leonard, then a lad of sixteen years, accompanied by their body servants, Edom and Fielding, brought up the rear. . . . Rivers and streams were crossed by pontoon bridges which they carried with them."¹³²

Groce rapidly acquired more land by purchase and barter. It is said that he secured the whole league on which the town of Courtney now stands for a bolt of domestic and a riding pony.¹³³ His first cotton was planted in the spring of 1822 and it is said that this was the first cotton planted in Texas. Corn was also planted and, according to Thrall, so scarce was food that it was necessary to maintain a watch over the fields at night to prevent the negroes from scratching up the seed for food.¹³⁴ Because of a protracted drought, very little corn was harvested from this first crop. As the drought continued into 1823, the plantation was destitute of bread. Corn was planted in the moist bed of a lake in the Brazos bottom (1823), resulting in an abundant yield. The cotton yield, from the beginning, was beyond expectation.¹³⁵ According to Mrs. Berlet, Groce established the first cotton gin in Texas

¹³²Berlet, *Groce, and Kindred Families*. Brackets are the writer's.

¹³³Thrall, *Pictorial History of Texas*, 549.

¹³⁴*Ibid.*

¹³⁵Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*, 45.

at his Retreat in 1828.¹³⁶ Others claim that Groce built his first cotton gin on the Brazos river as early as 1825. Some claim that the first cotton gin was owned by a John Cartwright in the "Red Lands" of east Texas.¹³⁷ It is known that John Austin had a gin stand at his plantation on Buffalo Bayou as early as July 3, 1825, but it cannot be established, at least the writer has not established the fact that he installed and operated a gin.¹³⁸

While a part of the Groce slaves were busily at work getting the plantation farming under way, others were at work erecting the "Big House." The building site was situated on a high bluff near the east bank of the Brazos river, about four miles south of the present town of Hempstead. The building was completed in 1822 and was named "Bernardo." Here Jared Ellison Groce resided until 1833, when he divided his property among his children and, taking with him several slaves, retired to his "Retreat" on Wallace Prairie, in what is now Grimes county. The name "Retreat" signified his retreat from the malaria-infested Brazos bottom vicinity. Here Jared E. Groce died November 20, 1836.¹³⁹ The cause of his death is given by W. P. Zuber as consumption.¹⁴⁰ This statement is denied by Leonard Waller Groce, son of Jared Ellison, who says that his father died of malaria and that some of his friends thought he had consumption because of a distressing cough that accompanied his affliction.¹⁴¹ Groce's Retreat was located about two miles southwest of the present little village

¹³⁶Berleth, "Jared E. Groce," *Quarterly*, XX, 358.

¹³⁷Looscan, "Harris county, 1822-1845," *Quarterly*, XIX, 52.

¹³⁸Barker, *Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1144.

¹³⁹Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*.

¹⁴⁰Zuber, W. P., Clipping from the *Houston Post* about 1905 or 1906. Clipping was not dated.

¹⁴¹Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*.

in Grimes county by the same name. The buildings were on an open prairie hill, situated in what is now the northwest corner of the farm owned by N. W. Lyles, and in the southwest corner of the S. D. Mason farm; on the east line of what is now the W. E. Sapp farm.¹⁴² After the death of Jared Ellison Groce, the heirs sold the Retreat plantation to a Mr. Dunham, a prospector from Tennessee. Mr. Dunham returned to Tennessee for his family, and died there. His family came on to Texas, however, and lived at the Retreat for many years. After the death of Mrs. Dunham, two and one-half leagues of land from this Retreat plantation were sold to Dougald McAlpine. He pulled down the houses at Retreat and built his own home about a mile north of the Groce residence site. The locality now came to be known as the McAlpine plantation, but the name "Retreat" was continued for the post office and village, on the stage line about two miles to the east of the old Groce headquarters.¹⁴³ The popular belief, prevalent in Grimes county, seems to be that Groce's Retreat was so named because Sam Houston, in his retreat northward, prior to the battle of San Jacinto, camped in this site. The writer finds no data to establish such a belief, nor even to indicate that Sam Houston ever established his camp on the east side of the Brazos.

Jared Ellison Groce did not favor the Fredonian movement, and when the Mexican colonel, Mateo Ahumada, arrived at

¹⁴²This information as to the location was given the writer by an old negro ex-slave, Dan West. Dan was brought into that community by R. M. West in 1852. He remembers that there were several buildings standing at the old Groce's Retreat. The writer went with him in person, to locate the exact locality. Dan is now (1928) 92 years old. His mind is clear, and he is very interesting when he tells of his trip to Texas down the Mississippi, through New Orleans, and Galveston to Houston.

¹⁴³Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*, 60. The clipping, mentioned in footnote number 114 above, is pasted in Mrs. Berlet's book.

the Brazos river with troops, he was offered the use of the Groce ferry, wagons, teams, and slaves.¹⁴⁴ When the convention of 1832 was called, Jared E. Groce was sent as representative for the precinct of Viesca.¹⁴⁵ He voted against the resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas.¹⁴⁶ He was chairman of the committee appointed to draft resolutions on the reduction of the tariff.¹⁴⁷ As early as June 5, 1824, Groce served as one of the committee of four (the other three members being Austin, James Cummins, and John P. Coles) elected by the inhabitants of Austin's colony to prepare a petition to the Mexican Congress concerning the tobacco and slavery question.¹⁴⁸

¹⁴⁴Berleth, "Jared E. Groce," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XX, 358.

¹⁴⁵Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 479. The other representatives from Viesca were William Robinson and Joshua Hadley. The town of Viesca was located at the falls of the Brazos and was in the municipality of the same name. The name of both the town and the municipality was changed on December 27, 1835, to Milam. Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 1002-3.

¹⁴⁶Oglesby, J. K., "And So Cotton Came to Texas," *Farm and Ranch*, October 29, 1928.

¹⁴⁷Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 486.

¹⁴⁸Barker, *The Austin Papers, Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 825-828. The prominent part played by Groce in the affairs of Austin's colony may be realized by noticing the numerous connections in which his name occurs in the Austin Papers. The following are cited as examples: *J. Erwin to Austin*, dated at Shelbyville, September 30, 1825, in which Erwin replies to accusations made by Groce regarding money matters (*Ibid.*, 1213); *Imla Keep vs. Jared E. Groce*, dated at San Felipe de Austin, May 10, 1826 (*Ibid.*, 1329); *Groce to Saucedo*, dated at Bernardo, January, 29, 1827, in which Groce prays for a new trial of the case mentioned above, stating that he (Groce) now has new evidence. Saucedo forwards the petition to Austin, who recommends a new trial (*Ibid.*, 1596-7); *Westall to Groce*, dated March 5, 1825, at San Felipe de Austin, in which Westall asks for corn, also there is here a receipt from Groce to Austin for ten dollars (*Ibid.*, 1055); *Groce to Austin*, dated at Alexandria, May 9, 1825, in which Groce compliments Austin for his stand of firmness with reference to some troublesome colonists (*Ibid.*, 1133); *Groce to Austin*, dated November 6, 1824, in which Groce advises that he is in bad health and requests Austin to select tracts of land for Dr. Keep, Thomas Purvis, Captain Brown, and Randals. Groce states that he had promised to do so for these men, but that he will be unable to do so because of the condition of his health (*Ibid.*, 933); *John P. Coles to Austin*.

Groce seems to have had something to do with the entrance of Sam Houston into the affairs of the colony, for, it is said that William H. Wharton wrote to Houston in Tennessee at the suggestion of his father-in-law, Jared E. Groce.¹⁴⁹ I find no record of any of the Groce men having participated personally in the military events of the Texas Revolution. This is explained as due to the fact that the father, Jared E. Groce II, was crippled in both hands, and was, during this period, suffering from tuberculosis, or malaria.¹⁵⁰ The younger Groce men remained at their respective plantations. None of them participated in the "Run Away Scrape." They frequently visited their father and looked after the affairs of his plantation. They used their wealth to provide for men who were in the army. Jared Ellison Groce III, at one time, is known to have fitted out five men for the army. During the campaign of April, 1836, just prior to Houston's forced march to the Harrisburg vicinity, preparatory to the battle of San Jacinto, the Texas army camped for about two weeks on the west bank of the Brazos at a point about one-half mile from the Groce ferry. During this period, large quantities of provisions were provided, free of charge, from the Groce plantation, while a hospital for the sick soldiers was maintained at the Groce home.¹⁵¹

dated November 9, 1824, in which Coles mentions having seen Groce, that he (Groce) was still unwell, and advises Austin that there will be no trouble with Groce about lands (*Ibid.*, 936).

¹⁴⁹Berleth, "Jared E. Groce," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XX, 358 ff.

¹⁵⁰Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*, Mrs. Berlet has pasted in her book a clipping from the *Houston Post*, written by W. P. Zuber. The writer finds only one instance of a Groce holding military office in Texas. Leonard Waller Groce was sub-lieutenant in the First Company of the first militia organized in Austin Municipality, March 21, 1829. (Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXI, 408-9).

¹⁵¹Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*, 58.

Jared E. Groce II was a widower at the time of his migration to Texas in 1821. He had been married twice. His first wife was Mary Waller (born in 1788, in Spottsylvania county, Virginia; died November 7, 1813, in Georgia), daughter of Leonard Waller (died in South Carolina in 1826) whose cousin, Judge Edwin Leonard Waller, came to Texas in 1831.¹⁵² The county of Waller was named in honor of this Judge Edwin Leonard Waller.¹⁵³ Three children were born to Jared E. Groce II and Mary, namely: Leonard Waller (born September 27, 1806, in Lincoln county, Georgia; died August 29, 1873, in Waller county, Texas), Sarah Ann (born in 1810 in Lincoln county, Georgia; died at Galveston, Texas, February 11, 1878), Jared Ellison III (born near Cambridge, South Carolina, September 5, 1812; died February 3, 1839, in Waller county, Texas). Mary (Waller) Groce, mother of the above children, died November 7, 1813, and in the following year, Jared E. Groce II married her sister, Anna Waller (died at Fort Groce, Alabama, March 30, 1818). Two children were born to this union. One of them, Edwin, was drowned in the Brazos river (1829 or 1830) at the age of sixteen years. The other, Waller William, was born at Jackson, Alabama, whither his mother had fled from the Indians. She returned with him to Fort Groce, when he was about six weeks old. Waller William died in youth.¹⁵⁴ Leonard Waller Groce mar-

¹⁵²Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*, 26-29.

¹⁵³Fulmore, *History of Texas as Told in County Names*, 118.

¹⁵⁴Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*, 26-29. Leonard Waller Groce was educated at a college at Montgomery, Alabama, to which he returned soon after his father came to Texas. He returned to Texas in 1825 and immediately assumed a large share of the responsibilities of the plantation. Mrs. Berlet, in her book, *Groce and Kindred Families*, states that Leonard Waller Groce, came to Texas in 1827. The writer, however, finds in the *Austin Papers*, a letter, *Sam Sexton to Austin*, dated May 9, 1825, in which Sexton advises thae he was coming to Texas, in the latter part of the same month, with young Groce and others. (Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1133.)

ried Courtney Ann Fulton (born September 20, 1816, in Rapides parish, Louisiana; died July 14, 1869, at Galveston, Texas), daughter of Alexander Fulton, an ex-Congressman from Louisiana. The little town of Courtney in Grimes county was named in her honor. They were married in the year 1831. Eleven children were born to this union, namely: Jared Fulton (born November 3, 1832, at Bernardo; died December 14, 1883), Sarah Wharton (born July 22, 1835; died September 2, 1838), Edwin Waller (born September 12, 1837, at Bernardo; died May 25, 1924), Mary Henrietta (born April 15, 1840, at Bernardo), Eliza Ellen (died January 4, 1888), Leonard Waller (born September 27, 1844, at Bernardo; died July 6, 1901, at Hempstead, Texas), John Harris (born July 7, 1846, at Bernardo), Martha (born September 12, 1848, at Bernardo; died in May, 1875), Bill Marcus (born September 10, 1830, at Bernardo; died December 1, 1909), Charles Courtney (born October 23, 1852; died 1914), Ellison Kirby (born December 15, 1854, at Liendo, the plantation home of his father; died 1883, at Austin, Texas).¹⁵⁵ Sarah Ann Groce did

¹⁵⁵Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*, and *Mrs. John Day to E. L. Blair*, September 20, 1928. Jared Fulton Groce was at one time a student at Independence in Washington county, Texas. He later spent two years in the Western Military Institute of Kentucky. During the Civil War he served in Company B, of the Eighth Texas Cavalry, known as Terry's Texas Rangers. He married, October 4, 1855, Asenath (Seeny) Margaret Jackson, daughter of Major A. Jackson of Brazoria county, Texas. They made their home in Waller county, and reared a family of five children, namely: Courtney Ann (born October 9, 1857; died July 23, 1861), Abner Jackson (born October 22 1859; died 1904), Courtney Fulton (born December 24, 1862), Margaret Andrew (born July 7, 1864; died May 5, 1886), and George Fulton (born June 10, 1867; died May, 1904). Courtney Ann, Abner Jackson, and George Fulton died unmarried. Courtney Fulton Groce now lives at Hempstead, Texas. She married Horace Russell, March 13, 1882, and is the mother of one daughter, Eva Lee, who is now Mrs. Henry Wheeler of Hempstead, Texas. Margaret Andrew (Drew) Groce married Cole Wood, March 13, 1881, and had one daughter, Asenath Jackson, who was the late Mrs. Edgar Casham of Hempstead, Texas. (*Mrs. John Day to E. L. Blair*, September 20, 1928).

Edwin Waller Groce, whose name was later changed to William Wharton,

not come to Texas with her father in 1821, but remained in school in the east until 1827. After graduation in New York, she came to Bernardo, accompanied by several relatives from

married, February 4, 1864, Emily Kate Wyatt (born June 14, 1844, at Madison, Georgia; died July 7, 1920, at Galveston, Texas), step-daughter of Colonel S. R. Blake. This family resided at "Bonnie Nook" their residence in Waller county until 1873, when they moved to Houston, and in the following year to "Eagle Island", in Brazoria county, where they lived with Mrs. Sarah Wharton, who willed her estate "Eagle Island" to William Waller at her death. William Waller and Emily Kate Groce had five children, namely: Fannie B. (born December 15, 1864), Leonard Courtney (born September 26, 1867; died March 2, 1928), Lelia (born May 26, 1871), Sarah Wharton (born December 23, 1876), and Katie Willeen (born July 14, 1880.) Fannie B. Groce died in early childhood. Leonard Courtney Groce was educated at Chapel Hill College, in Washington county, Texas. At the outbreak of the Civil war, he was employed in the auditor's office of the Southern Pacific Railway, at Houston, Texas. He joined the Confederate army as a member of the "Light Guards" and served with the rank of lieutenant. He moved to California in 1889, and from thence, a few years later, into Mexico, where he engaged in mining and rubber culture for a period of twenty-two years. The last twelve years of his life was spent at League City, Texas, and here he is buried. Leonard Courtney Groce married, in 1909, Maximina Machaem, of Ameca, Mexico, by whom he had five children, namely: Beatrice, Estella, Leonard Waller, Maximina, and Courtney. These children now reside at League City, Texas. (Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*.) Lelia Groce is now Mrs. J. M. Cravens of Santa Anna, Texas. She married on September 13, 1893, and is now a widow with five children, namely: Groce, Calla May, Wyatt Pearson, Fannie, and Katie Alfred. Of these, Groce, and Fannie died in infancy. Calla May is now Mrs. Joseph Bernard Brown of Houston, Texas. Wyatt Pearson is married and resides at Houston with his wife and two children. Katie Alfred is now Mrs. N. Wm. Campbell of Houston, Texas. She has a daughter by a former marriage, Calla Eddette Joseph (born March 17, 1922). Sarah Wharton Groce, daughter of William Wharton and Emily Kate Groce, is now Mrs. George Berlet of Houston, Texas. She was married on April 26, 1898, and is the mother of five children, all of whom live in Houston, Texas. They are, namely: Emily Kathleen (born February 25, 1899) who is now Mrs. Charles Woodberry Salmon of Houston, and is the mother of two children, Mildred Elizabeth (born October 15, 1918), and Charles Woodberry, Junior (born April 15, 1920); John Wharton (born September 17, 1901); Travis Montgomery (born February 5, 1904); William Groce (born December 5, 1905); and Rosalind Allen (born June 15, 1910). Katie Willeen Groce, sister to Sarah Wharton Groce, is now Mrs. Robert James Calder of Galveston, Texas. She has a son by a former marriage (to Arthur Richard Billingsley, December 19, 1900) by the name of Bruce Billingsley (born October 5, 1901), who now resides at Houston, Texas. Katie Willeen married Robert James Calder, April

South Carolina and Georgia. Here, a few months after her arrival she met William H. Wharton, with whose sister

18, 1906, by whom she had two children, Kate Willeen (born October 16, 1907), and Robert James, Junior (born December 11, 1916).

Mary Henrietta Groce, daughter of Leonard Waller and Courtney Ann Groce, married, September 24, 1857, William Bennatt of Macon county, Tennessee. She was living in Hempstead in 1901, but has since died. Their children were, as follows: Leonard Groce (born July 3, 1858), Catherine Cole (born October 6, 1857), William Martin (born March 7, 1861), and Fulton E. (born November 14, 1869). Leonard Groce Bennatt married, December 1, 1878, Helen E. Wilson, a girl raised by Mrs. William H. Wharton, by whom he had seven children, namely: Willie Muriel, Addie, Maud, Elizabeth H., Ben G., Charles H., and Robert H. Willie Muriel Bennatt is now Mrs. Parker Goddard of Waco, Texas, and is the mother of three children. Addie Bennatt is now Mrs. C. B. Dunigan of Dallas, Texas. Maud Bennatt is now Mrs. Fred Wallas of Waco, Texas. Elizabeth H. Bennatt is now Mrs. Naval James of Dallas, Texas. Ben G. Bennatt married Susie Post and they now reside at Richards, Texas. Charles H. Bennatt married Barbara Henry, but the writer has no information as to their present whereabouts. Robert H. Bennatt now resides at Waco, Texas. Catherine Cole Bennatt, daughter of Mary Henrietta and William Bennatt, is now Mrs. John Henry Day of Hempstead and is the mother of four children, namely: John Henry Junior, James Cochran, Emma, and Nettie May. John Henry Day, Junior married Ina Gardiner and now resides at Hempstead, Texas. James Cochran Day married Vera Wilson and they now reside at Brookshire, Texas. Emma Day is now Mrs. George Allen of Ennis, Texas. Nettie May Day was the late (died May 19, 1924) Mrs. Will Reed of Bellville, Texas. She is survived by five children, namely: Katherine, W. C., Mildred, Jack, and Moselle. William Martin Bennatt, brother of Catherine Cole Bennatt, married Willie Massie, daughter of Mart Massie of Houston, Texas, by whom he had five children, namely: Nettie, Kate Cole, Edward, Marcus, and Byrdia Lula. By a second marriage (to Ida Allen, daughter of George Allen of Waller County), William Martin Bennatt had ten children, namely: Mabel, Lela, William, Arrell, Robert Milton, Raphel, Millie, John Day, Martin Allen, and Emmie. Nettie Bennatt is now Mrs. James Ramsey of Shreveport, Louisiana. Kate Cole Bennatt is now Mrs. Terrell Sanders of Houston. Edward is married (wife was formerly Ruth Lawrence) and lives at Katy, Texas. Marcus Bennatt married Eunice Jones and resides at Houston. Brydia Lulu Bennatt is now Mrs. J. D. Mitchell of Hearne, Texas. Mabel Bennatt is now Mrs. Charles Greenwood of Hearne, Texas. Lela Bennatt is now Mrs. Milton Elskes of Houston. William is also at Houston. He married Lois Jones. Raphel Bennatt is now Mrs. Forbes Taylor of Houston. Emmie Bennatt is now Mrs. Van Wagnor of Houston. None of the other children of William Martin Bennatt are married and they, i. e., Arrell, Robert Milton, Mollie, Martin Allen, and John Day all reside at Houston, Texas. (*Mrs. John Day to E. L. Blair*, September 20, 1928.) Fulton E. Bennatt, son of Henrietta and William M. Bennatt, is now living at Hempstead, Texas. He has been

"Betsy" she had attended school in Nashville, Tennessee. They were married on December 5, 1827. Their wedding

married twice and had children by both wives. The first marriage was to Irene Bell, daughter of Elijah Bell of Hempstead, Texas, by whom he had eight children, namely: Ruth, Lillian Bell, Ollie, Lester, Walter Lee, Annie Mae, F. E., and James Coleman. The second wife of Fulton E. Bennatt was, before her marriage, Helen Bell, sister to his first wife. There were three children by this marriage, namely: Arline, Joe Herndon, and Douglas W. Ruth Bennatt is now Mrs. Jeff Allen of Hearne, Texas. Lillian Bell Bennatt is now Mrs. Van Jenkins of Hempstead, Texas. Ollie is now Mrs. C. J. Allen of Hearne, Texas. None of the others are married.

Eliza Ellen Groce, daughter of Leonard Waller and Courtney Ann Groce, married, February 18, 1867, Robert John Hughes of Galveston, Texas, where they made their home. They had two children, namely: Ellen Lee and Robert John, Junior. Ellen Lee Hughes resides at Hempstead, Texas. Robert John Hughes, Junior, married Esther Bray, daughter of Sydney Bray of England, and lives at Dickinson, Texas, with his wife and three children, namely: Robert John II (Jack), Dorothy Sophie Harryette, and Ellen Marjorie. Robert John Hughes II now has a wife and son, Robert John III. Dorothy Sophie Harriette is now Mrs. W. O. Warriner of Houston.

Leonard Waller Groce, Junior, served in Company B, of Terry's Texas Rangers during the Civil War. After studying medicine at New Orleans and Galveston, he was for many years physician for the Houston, Texas Central railroad with headquarters at Bryan, Texas. He died at his home, Bernardo, from a railroad accident, July 6, 1901. Leonard Waller Groce, Junior, married on December 29, 1873, Florence Herndon (died at Hempstead, Texas, in September, 1925), daughter of John Herndon of Brazoria county, Texas. Five children were born to this union, namely: Leonard Waller III (born October 12, 1874, at Bernardo; died in Nicaragua, October 16, 1909), Barbara (born 1878), Herndon, and Sandy. Leonard Waller Groce III, in 1891, was employed by Fowler & McVilie of Galveston, Texas. He went to Bluefields, Nicaragua, in 1897, and shortly thereafter accepted a position with a merchant in the mining district of Tonkey. From this time until his death, he was actively identified with various mining concerns in Nicaragua, at one time serving as manager of the Concordia Mining Company. He later became a prospector on his own behalf and accumulated considerable property. When Zelaya refused to accept the award of Alphonse XIII, king of Spain, regarding the boundary dispute between Nicaragua and Honduras, Groce went into the army of Zelaya and had attained the rank of Colonel at the close of the struggle. His chief, during this war, was Estrada who, about 1909, headed a revolutionary movement against Zelaya, when Groce, having been identified with the rebellion, fell into the hands of Zelaya, and was executed. (*The Houston Post*, December 12, 1909.) Leonard Waller Groce III married while in Nicaragua. His wife, before marriage, was Rosa Fernandez. She now lives in Nicaragua with their three children, namely: Leonard, Roberto, and Rosa. Barbara Groce, daughter of Leonard Waller Groce, Junior, now lives at Hempstead,

present from Jared E. Groce II was five leagues of land and a large house situated in what is now Brazoria county, Texas.¹⁵⁶ Jared Ellison Groce III was left in school in Georgia when his father came to Texas in 1821. He married, October 1, 1833, Mary Ann Calvit (born January 4, 1816, at Washington, Mississippi; died December 31, 1877, at Pleasant Hill Plantation, in Waller county, Texas). They had two children, namely: Jared Ellison IV, and Barbara Mackall (born July 7, 1838, at Pleasant Hill Plantation; died September 18, 1887, at Hempstead, Texas).¹⁵⁷ Edwin Groce, son of

Texas. Herndon Groce, brother to Barbara, is married and resides at Hempstead, Texas, with his wife (Sue Bethany) and two children, namely: John Herndon (born August 6, 1913), and Claude Bethany (born February 31, 1925). Sandy Groce is now living in El Paso, Texas.

John Harris Groce, son of Leonard Waller and Courtney Ann Groce, died while a young man. He never married.

Martha (Mattie) Groce, sister to John Harris Groce, married Captain R. A. McKay, on September 1, 1870. She died soon after the birth of their only son, Milton McKay. Milton McKay now lives near Cameron, Texas.

Bill Marcus Groce lived for several years at Hempstead. He is now dead, and the writer has no information about any family.

Charles Courtney Groce married twice and raised several children. His wives were sisters and their father's name was Goldsmith. The writer has no more information about this family. Ellison Kirby Groce died young.

¹⁵⁶Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*. The lumber for this house was cut, sawed, and numbered in Mobile, Alabama; conveyed thence by boat to the mouth of the Brazos river, and up this river for about twelve miles where the house was erected and named "Eagle Island". The five leagues of land given Wharton constituted all the land owned by Groce in Brazoria county, and was given as an inducement for Wharton to remain in Texas. (Groce, Wm. W., "John A. Wharton," *Quarterly*, XIX, 272.) William H. Wharton and his bride went to Nashville, Tennessee, to purchase furniture for their new home, and while there, John Austin, their only child, was born July 3, 1829. The important role played by the Whartons in the history of Texas is well known. Space forbids an attempt to do justice to them here. John A. Wharton married Penelope Johnson (died at Eagle Island, 1878), daughter of ex-governor Johnson of South Carolina. They had one daughter who died at the early age of eighteen years.

¹⁵⁷Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*. The writer was also assisted by the following persons: Mrs. Mack Robinson, John Herndon Groce, Mrs. Florence Herndon Groce, and Mrs. John Day, all of Hempstead, Texas.

Jared E. Groce IV served during the Civil War as an officer on the staff

Jared E. Groce II, was drowned in the Brazos river soon after he came to Texas. It seems that he was in a skiff with William H. Wharton, his wife and son, and was trying to cross the river while it was in a swollen condition and the ferry was out of condition. William H. Wharton succeeded in getting his wife and son, John Austin, to the bank, but when he returned for Edwin, he could not be found. Since Edwin was considered a good swimmer, it is thought that he must have been knocked unconscious by the log that overturned the skiff. The body was never found.¹⁵⁸

Joshua Hadley.—The Hadleys of Grimes county descended from a line of English Quakers who migrated into Ireland

of General John A. Wharton. At the close of the war he had attained the rank of Assistant Inspector General. Jared E. Groce IV married, June 24, 1868, Neveline Hopson, daughter of Clement Hopson of Houston, Texas. Two children were born to them, namely: Jared Ellison V (born December 18, 1870; died July 14, 1921, at Waller, Texas), and Clemmie Lee Clare. Jared E. Groce V married Venice McDade (born October 12, 1873), daughter of John M. McDade of Hempstead, Texas. She survives her husband and is now living at San Antonio, Texas. They had eight children, namely: Jared Ellison VI (born May 31, 1897), John Wharton (born 1898; died 1918), Walter (born September 10, 1900, at Waller, Texas), Lucile, Le Clare, Cecile, Marjorie, and Barbara. Jared Ellison VI, Walter, Lucile, Cecile, and Marjorie are all with their mother in San Antonio, Texas. Le Clare Groce is now Mrs. Eldon Dyer of Corpus Christi, Texas. John Wharton Groce was drowned in the Rio Grande river in 1918, while a soldier in the United States army. Clemmie Le Clare Groce, the other child of Jared Ellison Groce IV, is now Mrs. Mack Robinson of Hempstead, Texas, and is the mother of two children, namely: Clemmie Le Clare, who is now Mrs. John Abney of Lampasas, Texas; and Lucile, who is now with her mother at Hempstead, Texas.

Barbara Mackall Groce, daughter of Jared E. Groce III, married Dr. Philip Solomon Clarke (born August 25, 1834, in South Carolina; died March 3, 1859, in Waller county), by whom she had eleven children, namely: Mary Ann, now Mrs. Mary Mooney of Hempstead, Texas; Jared Ellison, now living at Houston; Philip Solomon, now living at Austin, Texas; Barbara Mackall, now Mrs. Charles E. Elliott of Houston; Sarah Calvit, now Mrs. John G. Elliott of Corpus Christi, Texas; Margaret Hamilton, now Mrs. Charles B. Wier of Houston; Susan Elizabeth, who died young; Joseph R., who now lives at Hempstead, Texas; Sarah Peebles, also died young; John, who now resides at San Francisco, California; and Lucy (died 1916) who was the late Mrs. Robert McDade.

¹⁵⁸Berlet, *Groce and Kindred Families*.

from Somerset Shire, England, some time during the middle of the sixteenth century. One of them, Simon Hadley (born in King's county, Ireland, February, 1677; died in New Castle county, Delaware, February, 1756), came to America with his wife, Ruth (born in Ireland; died in New Castle county, Delaware, December 18, 1750), and settled in New Castle county, Delaware, about 1712. Here they acquired considerable land and holdings, and here Simon Hadley died about 1756.¹⁵⁹ Their children were Joseph (born August 25, 1698), Deborah (born February 25, 1701), Joshua (born March 6, 1703), Simon (born December 23, 1704), Hannah (born November 16, 1709), Ruth (born December 6, 1711), Katherine (born February 25, 1715) and Ann (born December 7, 1717).¹⁶⁰ Of these children, we are here concerned pri

¹⁵⁹Morris P. Ferris, *Descendants of Simon Hadley*. A manuscript, a copy of which is now in the possession of Mrs. Stella Brosig, Navasota, Texas. Ferris was county historian of Chester county, Pennsylvania; Weeks, *Colonial and State Records of North Carolina*, F-L, XXIX; *Will of Simon Hadley*, which, according to Mrs. Stella Brosig, was published by the Colonial Dames of Delaware in their *Calendar of Wills*, the will being dated 1755; Caruthers, *Old North State*; and Davis, *Society of Cincinnati*. The writer has not examined these sources, but secured his information from a *Journal* prepared by Mrs. Brosig of Navasota, Texas. In this *Journal*, Mrs. Brosig quotes from the above sources. Additional source used by the writer was *Chalmers Hadley to Mrs. Stella Brosig*, an undated communication, in which Chalmers Hadley, then public librarian at Denver, Colorado, transmits data concerning the early history of Simon Hadley, which, he says, was secured for him by Thomas and Edith Webb of Dublin, Ireland, from the *Dublin Quaker Records*.

There seems to be some uncertainty as to the maiden name of Ruth, the wife of Simon Hadley. Mrs. Brosig gives it as Miller, while Ferris in his *Descendants of Simon Hadley*, has it as Keran. Many of the Hadleys seem to have been dropped from the Quaker church, during the American Revolution, because of their military activities. (*Rosa Rountree to Stella Brosig*, dated September 1, 1914.)

¹⁶⁰Ferris, in his *Descendants of Simon Hadley*, says of the above children: Joseph married (August 25, 1721) Amy Gregg; Deborah married (April 20, 1721) Benjamin Fred; Simon died unmarried in 1730; Hannah married (August 28, 1727) Thomas Dickson; Ruth married (October 21, 1721) Thomas Lindly; Katherine married (August 19, 1732) Robert Johnson; and Ann married (April 12, 1735) Richard Gregg.

marily, with Joshua who was the great-grandfather of Joshua Hadley, the Texas colonist. Joshua Hadley I served in the American Revolutionary Army as a lieutenant in Captain Taylor's Company, Sixth North Carolina Regiment.¹⁶¹ He later married (July 2, 1825) Mary Rowland (died 1733), daughter of Mary and Thomas Rowland. They were married at Newgarden Meeting, Pennsylvania. His wife's mother, Mrs. Mary Rowland, had purchased a tract of land (438 acres) from the Letitia Penn manor, along with some seven hundred acres, purchased earlier from William Penn, Junior. Two hundred and nineteen acres of this Letitia Penn purchase was given to Mary (Rowland) Hadley as a wedding present.¹⁶² The children of Joshua and Mary Hadley were Ruth (born 1726), Thomas (born 1728; died September 1, 1781), Sarah (born 1730), and Mary (born 1732).¹⁶³ This Thomas Hadley (born 1728, near Wilmington, Delaware) was the grandfather of the Joshua Hadley who came to Texas as a member of Stephen F. Austin's Colonial enterprise. He (Thomas Hadley) is said to have raised a company of militia, during the Revolutionary War, for the purpose of subduing the Scotch Tories in the neighborhood of Cross creek, North

¹⁶¹Mrs. Stella Brosig has a letter, signed by the Adjutant General, War Department, Washington, D. C., dated November 13, 1911, addressed to Morris P. Ferris, 676 West End Avenue, New York City (file number of the letter being 1847155). The following quotation is taken from this communication:

"The records of this office show that one Joshua Hadley served as a lieutenant in Captain Taylor's Company, 6th North Carolina Regiment, Revolutionary War. He was commissioned as lieutenant April 1, 1777; captain, June 13, 1779; was wounded at Eutaw, South Carolina, September 8, 1781; transferred to the 1st North Carolina Regiment, and on a muster roll of the 4th Company dated December 12, 1762, he is shown on command General Hospital."

¹⁶²*Gilbert Cope to Mrs. Stella Brosig*, dated at West Chester, Pennsylvania, September 19, 1917. He cites Futhey and Cope, *History of Chester County, Pennsylvania*.

¹⁶³Morris P. Ferris, *Descendants of Simon Hadley*, 6.

Carolina. While on a visit to his family in 1871, his home was raided by the Tories. Thomas Hadley ran to the upper story of his house, leaned out of the window and called as if to his men. The Tories fired at him in the window and he was killed by a ball that entered his mouth. The sons of Thomas made their escape, with the exception of Benjamin, who was captured and taken to a nearby island, where he was left bound for the insects to torture.¹⁶⁴ Benjamin, however, made good his escape from the island, and it is said that this island was then known as "Hadley Island." The wife of Thomas Hadley was Mary Thompson (born in Londonderry township, Chester county, Pennsylvania) daughter of John Thompson and Jane Davis. They settled in North Carolina at Cross creek (now Fayetteville) before or during the first part of the Revolutionary period, and Thomas Hadley seems to have played a prominent part in the affairs of the state.¹⁶⁵ He represented Campbellton in the provincial congress of North Carolina, which met at Halifax, North Carolina (November 12, 1776) to frame a government and adopt a constitution for the state.¹⁶⁶ He is said to have commanded a company of light-horse in the Revolutionary army, which accounted for the fact that he was afterwards known as Captain Thomas Hadley.¹⁶⁷ There were eight children born to Thomas and Mary Hadley, namely: Joshua (born July 17, 1753), Jane (born 1751), John (born 1755), Simon (born 1757), Benjamin (born 1760), Mary (born 1765), Thomas

¹⁶⁴Ferris, *Descendants of Simon Hadley*, also *Rosa Rountree to Mrs. Stella Brosig*, dated at Delaware Water Gap, August 29, 1914, in which the writer cites Carruthers, *History of North Carolina, 2nd Series*, for the above story.

¹⁶⁵*Ibid.*, 3. Also, Mrs. Brosig's *Journal* in which she cites Carruthers, *History of North Carolina*.

¹⁶⁶Ferris, *Descendants of Simon Hadley*, 3.

¹⁶⁷*Ibid.*

(born 1767; died 1805), Jesse (born 1763).¹⁶⁸ This Benjamin Hadley, son of Thomas and Mary Hadley, was the father of the Joshua Hadley who migrated to Texas from Tennessee, whither his father had moved from Alabama, where he had gone from North Carolina.

The writer does not have the exact date for these various moves. It is known that Benjamin Hadley and his family, consisting of one male and two female persons (probably his wife, daughter, and son) were in North Carolina in 1790, and that they remained there as late as 1795.¹⁶⁹ The two children born to this union were Mary and Joshua (born in North Carolina about 1786; died in Grimes county, Texas, at Hadley's Prairie, 1845). Benjamin Hadley's second wife was Bettie Henderson whom he seems to have married about 1805 and then moved to Alabama.¹⁷⁰ There were six children by this marriage, namely: Jesse, Simon, John, James, Jane, and Cynthia.¹⁷¹ Joshua, son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (King) Hadley, came to Texas about 1830.¹⁷² He first located in

¹⁶⁸Ferris, *Descendants of Simon Hadley*, 3. Joshua married Hanna Holmes; Jane married Captain Patrick Travis; Mary married William England; John married Margaret Livingston and moved to Tennessee; Simon is thought to have married a Wilcox, and then to have moved to Georgia. Of this, however, Ferris seemed uncertain. Simon, according to Ferris, was a major in the American Revolutionary Army. Thomas married (1769) Margaret Parker, daughter of John and Mary Parker. Jesse was unmarried in 1790, being listed in the census as owning eleven slaves.

¹⁶⁹The first wife of Benjamin Hadley was Elizabeth King, daughter of William and Amelia (Slade) King. They were evidently married very soon after the close of the American Revolution, for according to Ferris, in his *Descendants of Simon Hadley*, the census of North Carolina showed that they had two children in 1790. As proof that Benjamin Hadley was in North Carolina as late as 1795, Ferris cites *County Deed Records* of Cumberland County, North Carolina, in which, he says, there is a deed of gift, dated in 1795, in which Hadley's mother, Mary, gives to his sister, Mary, a slave. Hadley signed the deed as witness.

¹⁷⁰*Rosa Rountree to Mrs. Stella Brosig*, dated at Delaware Water Gap, August 29, 1914.

¹⁷¹Ferris, *Descendants of Simon Hadley*, 6.

¹⁷²*Application for Land*, 89, Texas Land Office. His Application was dated February, 1831. Also, Mrs. Stella Brosig's *Journal*.

what is now San Augustine county, Texas, but a short time thereafter located permanently on a league of land granted to him, situated in the present county of Grimes, a few miles northeast of the present town of Anderson, patent to which was dated May 7, 1831.¹⁷³ Here he erected a two-story house and nearby a log fort for the protection of his family and the citizens of the community, then known as Hadley's Prairie.¹⁷⁴ Several interesting Indian stories, told by the old pioneers of Grimes county, center around this Hadley fort. It is said that at one time two of the Hadley boys (Grantham and King) while on a trip to the nearby mill, were attacked by Indians. In the dash for the fort, Grantham fell from his horse, whereupon, King jumped from his own mount and placed his disabled brother thereon, and mounting behind, succeeded in making it safely into the fort.¹⁷⁵ There is another story of the killing and scalping of Mrs. Taylor, following an unsuccessful raid by Indians.¹⁷⁶ When the political disturbance with Mexico led to the Texas Revolution, Joshua Hadley joined the Texas army and served from June 30, 1836, to September 30, 1836.¹⁷⁷ For this service he was granted three hundred and twenty acres of land located in Grimes county, and patented September 4, 1846.¹⁷⁸ Joshua Hadley was a member of the Convention of 1832, serving with Jared E. Groce and William Robinson from the district of Viesca.¹⁷⁹ When the municipality of Washington was created in 1835,

¹⁷³*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. Also see map in Appendix II.

¹⁷⁴Mrs. Wallace Brosig's *Journal*.

¹⁷⁵Mrs. Wallace (Stella) Brosig has prepared a manuscript in the nature of a family history of the Hadleys. She gives the above story.

¹⁷⁶*Ibid.*

¹⁷⁷*Ibid.*, Mrs. Brosig cites bounty warrant number 2113, *General Land Office Records*, Austin, Texas.

¹⁷⁸*Ibid.*, also *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

¹⁷⁹Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 479.

Joshua Hadley and H. J. Williams were candidates for the office of alcalde and Hadley was elected by a vote of one hundred and sixty to one hundred and forty-seven.¹⁸⁰ Hadley was an active Mason, being a charter member of the Orphan's Friend Lodge No. 17, which was organized at the house of Henry Fanthorp on April 8, 1842. He then served on a committee, with Major Martin and J. W. Barnes to secure a warrant and dispensation from the Grand Lodge of the Republic of Texas.¹⁸¹

The wife of Joshua Hadley before her marriage was Obedience Grantham who is said to have been born about 1800 in either North Carolina or Tennessee. The writer has no information about her family, other than to find that they are said to have come to America from England at an early date. The land application of Joshua and Obedience Hadley was dated in February of 1831 and gives their ages as thirty-six and thirty-one years respectfully.¹⁸² They had five children, namely: Denny Porterfield (born about 1825, in Ten-

¹⁸⁰Winkler, "Documents Relating to the Municipality of Washington," *Texas Historical Association Quarterly*, X, 98.

¹⁸¹W. T. Neblett, T. P. Buffington, and J. G. McDonald, *Committee Report to the Orphan's Friend Lodge Number Seventeen*, dated at Anderson, Texas, on September 6, 1926. In this report is a quotation from the minutes of the first meeting of the lodge, as follows:

"At the first meeting . . . organized at the house of Henry Fanthorp, with the following Masons present: Joshua Hadley, Daniel Magee, Henry Fanthorp, Josiah C. Massie, John F. Martin, David C. Dickson, George M. Patrick, James W. Barnes, Felix W. Magee, recognized as worthy Master Masons, met at the house of Henry Fanthorp . . . By agreement, then adopting the measures from a lodge of ancient York Masons at this place. The meeting was organized by calling Dr. Dickson to the chair . . . The chair requested Joshua Hadley and F. W. Magee to distribute the ballots for the election of W. M. On announcing the ballots counted thus: Massie five, Dickson two, Barnes one."

It is shown from these minutes that other officers elected at this meeting were as follows: Senior Warden, Dickson; Junior Warden, Geo. M. Patrick; Secretary, Barnes; Treasurer, Henry Fanthorp; Tiler, D. Magee.

¹⁸²*Land Applications*, 89, General Land Office of Texas, Austin, Texas. Mrs. Stella Brosig's *Journal*.

nessee), Travis King, Caroline, Grantham H., and Henry F. Only one of these, Henry F. Hadley, was born in Texas.¹⁸³ Obedience Hadley died in 1839, and her widower, Joshua, later married Joyce V. McGuffin, by whom he had three children, namely: Joshua, William B., and Anthony D.¹⁸⁴ Denny Porterfield Hadley married and raised a family. The writer, however, has been able to get no information concerning his descendants. The writer has also failed to secure information about Travis King Hadley.¹⁸⁵ Their sister, Caroline Hadley, married John F. Martin (died at Anderson, Texas, 1846),¹⁸⁶ by whom she had four children, namely: Winston Travis, William A., John F. (born May 11, 1843;

¹⁸³Mrs. Brosig's *Journal*, and *Transcribed Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, I, 89.

¹⁸⁴These three Hadleys were named, in 1853, as being minor heirs of Joshua Hadley and were then under the guardianship of Joyce V. Hadley. They were also mentioned as half-brothers to T. K. Hadley (Travis King). *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, II, 333.

¹⁸⁵Anthony D. Hadley, half-brother to Travis King and Denny Porterfield Hadley, is now living near Cleburne, Texas, and could probably give the desired information. Lou M. Hadley of Fort Worth, Texas, is a son of Henry F. Hadley, younger brother of Denny Porterfield, and could likely give some information. The writer has been unable to get an answer to communications addressed to either of these.

¹⁸⁶John F. Martin arrived in Texas about 1830 and secured a grant of one-quarter league of land in what is now Brazos county, patent to which is dated May 11, 1831. (Mrs. Brosig's *Journal* in which she cites *Records of Austin's Colony* which the writer has not verified) Martin is said to have served in the Texas army from January 10, 1835, to August 7, 1836. (*Bounty Certificates* are cited by Mrs. Brosig in her *Journal*.) At the approach of Santa Anna's Army, Martin is said to have been sent to help conduct the women and children to safety. (Mrs. Brosig's *Journal* in which she cites Yoakum's *History of Texas*, II, 131.) At his death in 1846, John F. Martin left an estate valued at \$12,636, consisting of 11,883 acres of land and sixteen negro slaves. (*Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, I, 56-59.) It is said that the present Odd Fellow's Cemetery at Anderson is located on a plot of ground on which Martin was preparing to construct a new residence and which after his death was given to the Lodge for a cemetery, in which Martin was the first to be buried. (*J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, June 23, 1928.)

died December 6, 1918) and Margaret Obedience.¹⁸⁷ Caro-

¹⁸⁷Winston Travis Martin is said to have served in Walker's Division during the four years of the Civil War. He married a Miss Marshall soon after the close of the war. She died about 1871 and, about 1884, Winston Travis married Ellen Jennings. There were no children by either marriage. (*Mrs. Stella Brosig to E. L. Blair*, June 27, 1929, also *J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, June 11, 1928.)

William A. Martin was educated at Independence, Texas. He served under Captain William Hutcheson, as a member of Company G, Hood's Texas Brigade during the four years of the Civil War. (See *Muster Roll of Hood's Texas Brigade* in the appendix of this thesis.) At the close of the War he married Lena Thomas, daughter of R. S. Thomas of Anderson, Texas. She died in 1870, having been the mother of one son, Robert A. Martin, who died at Anderson, about 1919. By a second marriage, William A. Martin had three children, namely: Amelia, Winston, and Ben. Amelia Martin (died 1925) was the late Mrs. C. H. Bridges of Anderson, Texas. She was post mistress at Anderson, Texas, at the time of her death. There were no children. Winston Martin, son of William A. Martin, now resides at Wharton, Texas. He is a widower with one son. Ben Martin is now a dentist in New York City. (*J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, June 11, 1928.)

John F. Martin, Junior, served four years in Hood's Texas Brigade, Company G, during the Civil War. (See *Muster Roll* in appendix of this thesis.) He was county Treasurer in Grimes county, 1880-1888. (See *List of County Officials* in appendix of this thesis.) John F. Martin, Junior, married Alice Stevens (born March 11, 1847). Mrs. John F. Martin is now living with her daughter, Mrs. Stella Brosig, at Navasota, Texas. They had nine children, namely: Bell, John S., Kate, Maude, Donald, Stella, Wallace, Jeanett, and Charlie. Bell Martin (born December 11, 1866) is now Mrs. G. C. Stoneham of Yarboro community, Grimes county, and is the mother of six children, namely: Bernice, Maude, Jerald Fulton, Alice, John, and Doris. John S. Martin (born March 22, 1871) now resides at Dallas, Texas, with his wife (formerly Allie Lauderdale) and four children, namely: John Luther, Clifton, Aleene, and Sam. Kate Martin (born May 15, 1869) was the late Mrs. M. Menger of Navasota, Texas. She was killed in an automobile accident in 1926. Mrs. Menger was active in the social and religious life of her community. There were no children by this marriage. Maude Martin is now Mrs. John T. Evans of Navasota, Texas, and is the mother of two children, namely: Myrtle and John T., Junior. Myrtle is now Mrs. Henry C. Baker of Navasota, Texas, and is the mother of one daughter, Margaret (born June 28, 1917). Donald Martin (born February 7, 1875) now lives at Dallas. His wife was formerly Minnie Camp, daughter of C. C. Camp, Senior, of Navasota, Texas. They have two children, namely: Virginia (born August 10, 1902) and Collins. Virginia is now Mrs. Renau Bassett of Dallas, Texas. Stella Martin (born December 1, 1876) is now Mrs. Wallace Brosig of Navasota, Texas, to whom the writer is indebted for her assistance in the preparation of this sketch. Mrs. Brosig is active in the civic life of her community and state, having served during the World War as a member of the Grimes County Council of Defense, and later as chairman of the War Savings Stamp Committee. Mrs. Brosig belongs to the

line (Hadley) Martin later married Oliver H. P. Hill by whom she had seven children, namely: Gibbs, Alice, Joshua

Daughters of the Republic of Texas, of which organization she has served as third Vice President. She is a member of the Texas Daughters of the Confederacy, and of the Daughters of the American Revolution, and is now chairman of the Washington State Park on the Brazos Committee. Wallace Martin, son of Alice (Stevens) and John F. Martin, Junior, died in infancy. Jeanette Martin (born January 8, 1880) is now Mrs. R. Andrew Sangster of Navasota, Texas, and is the mother of five children, namely: Katherine (born September 5, 1901), Margaret E. (born February 25, 1903), Jeanette (born October 7, 1905), Robert Andrew, Junior, (twin to Jeanette), and Alysse (born January 4, 1908). Robert Andrew, Junior, is the only one of the above who is married. His wife was, before marriage, Flora Mae Griffin. They were married during the year 1928. The four Sangster sisters constitute one of the most wholesome and influential groups felt in the religious and social life of their community. Charlie Martin (born March 18, 1882) died of influenza, October 20, 1918, while a soldier in the Company E, Third Infantry, United States Army, stationed at Fort Sam Houston.

Margaret Obedience Martin, only daughter of Caroline and John F. Martin, married H. H. Wilson (born January 9, 1828; died December 24, 1913), son of John and Mary Ann Wilson of Belfast, Ireland. The career of H. H. Wilson is interesting. It is said that he came from Ireland to Nova Scotia, in 1858, making the trip in a small sailboat in which it took him three months to cross the Atlantic. Wilson went from Nova Scotia to Boston, where he visited with some aunts. He next went to New York City; thence to New Orleans, where he met his brother, John H. Wilson, with whom he came to Anderson, Grimes county, by way of Galveston. Arriving at Anderson, the two brothers established themselves in the mercantile business. When the Civil War started, H. H. Wilson joined the Confederate army and served with the rank of lieutenant in Company D, Eighth Texas Infantry, Walker's Division. In the year 1865, he married Margaret Obedience Hadley, as stated above, by whom he had ten children, namely: Mary Caroline (born December 12, 1866; died February 14, 1915), Arthur Hugh (born October 27, 1868), Walter T. (born October 12, 1871; died May 27, 1927), Alice Mabel (born 1874; died 1891), Hugh Cochran (born 1876; died 1879), H. B. (born October 6, 1878), Hugh M. (born June 13, 1880), Margaret E. (born November 1, 1882), John (born 1885; died 1887), and Ethel H. (born January 14, 1890). Mary Caroline Wilson never married. Arthur H. Wilson now lives at Navasota. He married Susan Boone, and a sketch of his family will be found in connection with the Boones in footnote number 294 of this thesis. The late Walter Wilson was a prominent physician at Navasota. He is survived by his widow, formerly Stella Ogilvy, and three sons, namely: W. O., Charles O., and W. Travis. W. O. Wilson lives at Navasota with his wife, formerly Mary Sloan, and one son, Ogilvy (born February 18, 1924). Charles O. Wilson also lives at Navasota, and has a wife (Lorene Bachus before marriage) and small son, Charles, Junior. W. Travis Wilson is preparing himself for the medical profession. Hugh B.

P., Paul O., Ben J., and Mollie.¹⁸⁸ The writer has no information about Grantham H. Hadley, son of Joshua and Obe-

Wilson served in the United States army during the Spanish-American War, being dismissed after an injury caused by lightning stroke. It seems that he was sick with typhoid fever and was struck by lightning while being moved to a hospital. He afterward married Edith Lovejoy, daughter of Colonel J. Lovejoy. Both are now living at Dallas. They have three children, namely: Lester, H. T., and Virginia. Lester is married and living at Shreveport, Louisiana, and H. T. Wilson is also married and living in New York. Dr. Hugh M. Wilson, son of Margaret Obedience and H. H. Wilson, is now a physician at Navasota, Texas. Dr. Wilson was House surgeon at the Missouri Pacific Hospital, in Palestine, Texas, from 1906 to 1909. In 1925, he did post graduate work in a medical school in New York, and later visited England and Ireland, taking advantage of the opportunity to visit the birthplace of his father, at Belfast, Ireland. It is to Dr. Hugh Wilson that the writer is indebted for the information given in this sketch of the Wilson family. Margaret Wilson is now Mrs. Sam Stovall of Navasota, Texas, and is the mother of two children, namely: Sam Wilson (born July 30, 1922), and Joe Hugh (born January 10, 1925). Ethel H. Wilson is now Mrs. M. E. Jones of Houston, Texas, and is the mother of three children, namely: Stella Wilson, Ray Lester (died May 30, 1929), and Margaret Ethel. (*Dr. Hugh M. Wilson to Mrs. E. L. Blair, July 24, 1929; also Mrs. Sam Stovall to Mrs. E. L. Blair, July 24, 1929.*)

¹⁸⁸Gibbs Hill now lives at Corpus Christi, Texas, and has a family but the writer does not have the names of his wife and children.

Alice Hill was the late Mrs. P. B. Jennings (died about 1894) of Anderson, Texas. She is survived by her husband and five children, namely: Travis, Pleas, Juanita, Della, and Ellen. Travis Jennings lives at Anderson and has a wife and two children, Travis, Junior, and a small daughter whose name the writer does not have. Pleas Jennings is unmarried and now lives with his father at Anderson. Juanita Jennings is now Mrs. Edgar Spurlock of Houston. Della Jennings is teaching in the Houston city schools. Ellen Jennings married and moved to Brazoria county where she died several years ago. The writer has no data on her family.

Joshua P. Hill now lives in Greer county, Oklahoma. He is married, but the writer has no data on his family.

Paul O. Hill was killed by a railroad accident at Corsicana, Texas, in 1878, and left no family.

Reuben P. Hill is now living with his third wife at Stoneham, Texas. He married Lucy Harrison, sister of Hugh Harrison of Anderson, by whom he had two children, namely: Lilian and Mary. Reuben P. Hill's second wife, before her marriage, was Willie Cuthrell, daughter of J. W. Cuthrell of Roan's Prairie community. There were three children by this marriage, namely: Roland Cuthrell (born September 28, 1900), Ida Mae (born June 21, 1902), and Claudia. The third wife of Reuben P. Hill (now living) was, before her marriage, Carrie Grant, daughter of J. T. Grant. There are no children by this marriage. Lillian Hill is now Mrs. J. H. Stoneham of Stoneham, Texas. Mary Hill is now Mrs.

dience Hadley.¹⁸⁹ His brother, Henry F. Hadley, married Minnie Mooring, daughter of L. M. Mooring, and raised a family of five children, namely: Joshua P., L. M., C. G., Seth, and Sallie.¹⁹⁰ Joshua Hadley, Junior, son of Joshua Hadley, Senior by his second wife, was a deaf mute. He died March 19, 1924, in Grimes county.¹⁹¹ The writer has no data concerning William B. Hadley, brother to Joshua Hadley, Junior.

T. B. Viser of Madisonville, Texas. Roland C. Hill is living at Anderson, Texas, and served as county treasurer of Grimes county from 1924 to 1928. (See *List of county officers* in appendix to this thesis.) He married Ruth Clayton of Bedias community, and they have a small son, Roland C. Hill, Junior. Ida Mae Hill is a member of the public school faculty at Abilene, Texas.

Ben J. Hill, son of Caroline and Oliver H. P. Hill, now resides at Navasota, Texas. His wife was formerly Mrs. Eva Ethridge, daughter of Gen. J. W. Barnes. They have three children, namely: Oliver, Eva, and Allen. Oliver Hill died while in the United States army during the World War. Eva is married and living in San Antonio, Texas. Allen is now living at Anderson, Texas. His wife is the daughter of Oscar Gooch of Navasota, Texas, and they have two small children.

Mollie Hill married J. T. Harrison of Anderson, Texas, and moved from Grimes county. The writer has no information about her family. (*J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair and Roland C. Hill to E. L. Blair, July 23, 1928.*)

¹⁸⁹Anthony D. Hadley, who resides near Cleburne, Texas, is a half-brother and should be able to give the information.

¹⁹⁰Joshua P. Hadley, son of Henry F. Hadley, married Mattie Floyd (born May 24, 1869), daughter of Jim Vernon and Mary Floyd. They now reside in the Roan's Prairie community of Grimes county, and are parents of two children, namely: Eleanor (born September 22, 1891), and Birdie (born December 7, 1892). Eleanor Hadley is now Mrs. J. S. Smith of the Roan's Prairie community of Grimes county, and is the mother of one son, Jarrell. Birdie Hadley is now Mrs. P. V. Fuqua of Roan's Prairie community in Grimes county, and is the mother of three small children, namely: J. P. (born March 10, 1919), Floyd (born December 27, 1921), and Percy (born December 19, 1923). (*Doris Floyd to E. L. Blair, June 2, 1929.*)

Lou M. Hadley, brother to Joshua P. Hadley, married Mabel Sumners, and live at Fort Worth, Texas, with his wife and two children, Hall, a son, and a daughter whose name the writer does not have.

C. G. Hadley is single and living at Fort Worth, Texas.

Seth Hadley is also single and living at Baird, Texas.

Sallie Hadley is now Mrs. Spencer Mayfield of the state of Florida. She has one son by the name of Henry. (*Mrs. Mattie Hadley to E. L. Blair, July 23, 1929.*)

¹⁹¹*Mrs. Mattie Hadley to E. L. Blair, July 23, 1929.*

Anthony D. Hadley, youngest son of Joshua and Joyce Hadley, is now living near Cleburne, Texas, and has raised a large family. The writer has no information about the members of this family.¹⁹²

John Harris.—John Harris came to Texas from the state of Tennessee. His land application is dated in February of 1831 and shows him to have been twenty-three years old and unmarried.¹⁹³ His grant was for one-quarter league, situated several miles northeast of the present town of Anderson, in Grimes county, patent to which was dated, October 16, 1832.¹⁹⁴ This tract of land was sold by John B. Harris to Mitchell Kennard, November 27, 1834.¹⁹⁵ John Harris married Virginia Goodrich, a daughter of Benjamin Briggs Goodrich.¹⁹⁶ The family lived for a time at Alta Mira (now

¹⁹²*Mrs. Mattie Hadley to E. L. Blair, July 23, 1929.*

¹⁹³*Land Applications, 89, in the General Land Office of Texas, at Austin, Texas.*

¹⁹⁴*Abstract of Texas Land Titles, I, 604.*

¹⁹⁵*Transcribed Deed Records of Montgomery County, Volume 83, 246-247.*

¹⁹⁶Dixon, Sam Houston, "Men Who Made Texas," *Houston Chronicle*, April, 1923. Benjamin Griggs Goodrich (born 1799, in Brunswick county, Virginia) was the son of John Goodrich and the grandson of the John Goodrich who served as lieutenant in the Fourth Virginia Battalion during the American Revolutionary War. He was descendant of Zacheus Goodrich who came to America from Scotland in 1715. As a small child Benjamin Briggs Goodrich was taken with his parents from Virginia to Tennessee, where he grew into manhood and was given an academic education. He later graduated from a medical college in Baltimore and began the practice of medicine there. Returning to Tennessee, he went, thence, to Mississippi and practiced medicine for a time near Vicksburg; going, thence, to Tuscaloosa, Alabama; thence, to Tallahassee, Florida; thence back to Alabama, where he served one term in the Legislature of that state. From Alabama, he came to Texas, in 1833, and settled in what is now Grimes county, in what was then known as the Eureka community, near the present town of Anderson. A younger brother, John Goodrich, came to Texas with him, joined the relief squad that entered the Alamo, where young Goodrich lost his life. (Williams, Amelia, *The Siege and Fall of the Alamo*, his name being here listed as John C. Goodrich.) This young man was commonly known as the "Bee Hunter," and the family emblem of the Goodriches in Scotland was the Bee. (*Ben Pearce to E. L. Blair, dated October 31, 1927. Pearce is a grandson of B. B. Goodrich.*) Benjamin B. Goodrich was a delegate to the Consultation, October 16, 1835. (Gammel, *Laws of Texas, I, 1069*); delegates to the Con-

Anderson) where John Harris was engaged in the mercantile business. They afterward moved to Houston, Texas, where John Harris died about sixty years ago. John and Virginia Harris had three children, namely: John G., Ben, and Mary.¹⁹⁷ There were many Harris's in Austin's colony, and they are mentioned in numerous connections in the Austin Papers, however, the writer has been unable to find any mention of John B. Harris.¹⁹⁸ It seems, also, impossible to show that the John B. Harris, of Grimes county, was related to the Harris's of Harrisburg. John B. Harris went to Harrisburg to live, however, and in the minds of many, he is thought to have been closely related to these pioneer Harris's of that vicinity.

Jacob Hays.—The writer finds no information in the Application for Land concerning Jacob Hays. There is a grant for one league to him, situated in Grimes county a few miles southwest of the present town of Anderson, patent to which

vention that met at Washington, March 1, 1836. (Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 1085.) In both he was a strong advocate for separation from Mexico. He signed the Declaration of Independence, and took an active part in the preparation of the first Constitution. (Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 824.) Benjamin B. Goodrich married Serena Crothers, from the state of Kentucky. They had nine children, namely: Ben (died February 21, 1923), John (died 1851), Virginia, Serena, Eugenia, Elizabeth, Mary Rhoda, Briggs (died 1889), and William. Mrs. W. C. Gibson of Navasota, Texas, is a daughter of Eugenia Goodrich.

¹⁹⁷*Ben Pearce to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, June 6, 1929. John G. Harris married a woman by the name of Lou, but left no children. Ben Harris married Susie Boyd, from Mississippi. They had one daughter, Susie, who now lives in Philadelphia. Her husband is said to be an educator, but the writer does not know the name. Ben Harris's second wife was Ida Ehinger, sister of Mrs. W. C. Preston, now of Fort Worth, Texas, where Ida also resides. Mary Harris married B. H. Barnes, formerly a merchant at Fort Worth. They had two daughters, namely: Ruth, now Mrs. Harvey Hubbard of Louisville, Kentucky; and Florence, who died young.

¹⁹⁸Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919 and 1922*.

was dated April 8, 1831.¹⁹⁹ This land was sold, May 18, 1834, to James Darwin, and no heirs were mentioned.²⁰⁰

Francis Holland.—In 1822 Francis Holland conducted a large group of relatives from Louisiana into what is now Grimes county, Texas. Following the old Coshatte Trace, they came upon the log houses belonging to Andrew Millican, on the southwest side of Ten Mile creek. Francis Holland bought all the improvements from Millican, and located his league along both banks of the creek. The other members of this group of immigrants were William Holland, whose family consisted of his wife and three daughters; Mrs. Mary Peterson, sister to Francis and William Holland, and her two sons; John and Wesley Fisher, each of whom had a family. All of the group, except John Fisher, settled in this vicinity.²⁰¹ Francis Holland from the beginning participated in the public affairs of his new state. He served several terms as alcalde for his district, which was then somewhat larger than the present county of Grimes.²⁰² In December, 1830, he was elected comisario for the precinct of Viesca.²⁰³ In 1832, his house was one of the three designated polling places for the precinct of Viesca, and Francis Holland was the presiding election judge.²⁰⁴ In 1832 he was a dele-

¹⁹⁹*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁰⁰*Transcribed Deed Records of Montgomery County*, Volume 83, 226.

²⁰¹Zuber, *W. P.*, to Buffington, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

²⁰²Zuber to Buffington, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

²⁰³Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XXIII, 214.

²⁰⁴*Ibid.*, XXIV, 161. The other two voting places in this precinct were the houses of Walter Sutherland (presided over by Jesse Grimes), and the house of Frelk Rankin (presided over by M. Herbert). The house of Francis Holland had been a voting place as early as November 27, 1829, and was then presided over by Jesse Grimes. (Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XXI, 415.)

gate to the convention that met at San Felipe de Austin.²⁰⁵ His death in 1834 prevented his participation in the Texas Revolution. That he would have been ready and willing to serve in a military capacity may be inferred from the fact that he is named as second sergeant in the first militia organized in the municipality of Austin, March 21, 1829.

The active part Francis Holland played in Austin's colony may be appreciated by an examination of the Austin correspondence.²⁰⁶ The wife of Francis Holland was formerly a Miss Buck, and she was a sister to the wife of William Holland. They had six children, namely: James, Tapley, Frank, William, Susie, and Nancy. The four boys were all dead by 1838, and left no descendants. The youngest, William, died in 1834, as did his father and mother. In 1836, the other three boys volunteered for the Texas army, and participated in the activities around Bexar and Concepcion, where James contracted measles, which settled in his lungs. Frank accompanied him home where he died in the fall of 1836.²⁰⁷ Tapley remained in the army and died in the Alamo, March 6, 1836.²⁰⁸ In the spring of 1838, Frank was killed by Indians while on a surveying expedition. He was killed while he and two other members of the party were hunting game.²⁰⁹ Susan Holland, daughter of Francis, married William Bur-

²⁰⁵Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 497.

²⁰⁶Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 739, 772, and 1552.

²⁰⁷*Zuber to Buffington*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903, also *W. T. Schumacher to E. L. Blair*, dated at Heith, Texas, June 18, 1928. Mr. W. T. Schumacher is a descendant of Francis Holland.

²⁰⁸Williams, Amelia, *The Siege and Fall of the Alamo*, 200. Mrs. Williams gives the name of Tapley Holland, age twenty-four, listed from Grimes county, Texas.

²⁰⁹*Zuber to Buffington*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

ney.²¹⁰ Nancy, the other daughter of Francis Holland, married William Berryman.²¹¹

William Holland.—As stated above, William Holland came to Texas from Louisiana, with his brother Francis, in 1822. He established his headright league in the same vicinity, patent to which was dated August 10, 1824.²¹² Both William and his wife (sister to the wife of Francis) died soon after their arrival (Zuber thinks in 1833), leaving three daughters, namely: Katie (died about 1886, buried at Iola, Texas), Sarah (born August, 1818; died about 1844), and a third, whose name the writer does not have. Both Katie and Sarah married and reared large families.²¹³

²¹⁰*Zuber to Buffington*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903; *W. T. Schumacher to E. L. Blair*, dated at Keith, Texas, June 18, 1928. For more information regarding Susan, see William Burney, index.

²¹¹*Ibid.*, William Berryman and Nancy Holland had three children, namely: William (died young), John (died single), and Susan (died September 4, 1859) married Henry Schumacher (1858) and was the mother of one son, W. T. Schumacher (born June 4, 1859), who now resides at Keith, Grimes county, and to whom the writer is indebted for assistance in preparing this record. The above heirs of Susan Berryman are also found listed in the *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, T. 463.

²¹²*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²¹³Katie Holland married three times. Her first husband was a man by the name of McDowell. The writer thinks, but has been unable to prove, that this was the M. McDowell who patented land in Grimes county, October 5, 1835. McDowell and Katie had two children, namely: Sam and Elizabeth (Betsie). The second husband of Katie Holland was John Treadwell, by whom she gave birth to one son, John. Katie later married William Cobb, by whom she had four children, namely: Henry, Frank, Thomas, and Robert. Concerning the children of Katie Holland, it is known that Elizabeth (Betsie) married Plummer Franklin (1854), by whom she had nine children, namely: Alice, now Mrs. Gus Roberson of Iola, Texas; Barbara, now Mrs. J. D. Maxwell of Iola, Texas; Mattie, the late Mrs. W. P. Hogue of Iola, Texas; James; Tom, now residing at Bryan, Texas; Jim; Jeff; Harrison, commonly known as "Sugg"; Howell, married Emma Moore and is now dead. (*Mrs. Mary McCary to E. L. Blair*, dated at Iola, Texas, July 2, 1928.) John Treadwell, son of Katie and John Treadwell, married Leovenia Ariola, daughter of Mesamore Ariola. The writer has no information about their family. Henry Cobb, son of Katie and William Cobb, married a Miss Grissett, daughter of Charlie Grissett. Both Henry and his wife were drowned in Bell

James Holland.—The writer assumes that the James Holland who secured a quarter league grant of land, patent to which was dated April 7, 1831, situated between Navasota and Anderson, in Grimes county, is one and the same as the James Holland, son of Francis Holland, who died of measles

county, Texas, a few years ago. Frank Cobb married Cally Barrett, daughter of Charlie Barrett, by whom six children were born, namely: Charlie, now of Houston, Texas; Ida Mae, now Mrs. John Franklin; Jesse; Arthur and Katie. Thomas married Maggie Gayle (both now dead), by whom he had seven children, all of whom are now living but one; they are, namely: Will, now of Houston, Texas; Ed, now at Cross, Grimes county, Texas; Walter, now at Concord, Texas; Julia, now Mrs. Martin Stone of Cross, Texas; Susie, the late Mrs. Dolphus Sherfield of Cross, Texas; Maggie, now Mrs. Wallie Hicks of Houston, Texas; Clara, now Mrs. Charlie Mize of Iola, Texas. (*McCray to Blair*, dated at Iola, Texas, July 2, 1928.)

Sarah Holland, the other daughter of William Holland, married W. H. Grissett (born August, 1814; died 1844), by whom she had two sons, namely: John (born 1838), William Holland (born December, 1841). John Grissett lost his life while a prisoner during the Civil War. Mrs. Josephine Grissett of North Zulch, Texas, tells that he was with a squad of prisoners who, having been marched for three days without water, came to a stream and were forbidden to drink; whereupon, John Grissett, disregarding the order, fell down and began to drink, and as a result was shot while thus drinking. (*Mrs. Josephine Grissett to E. L. Blair*, dated at North Zulch, July 28, 1928.) William Holland Grissett enlisted in the Confederate army at the age of nineteen. According to Mrs. Josephine Grissett (his widow), he was a member of Green's Brigade, fifth regiment, Cloud's company of cavalry. It is said that he was with the first group of troops to be enlisted from Grimes county. At the close of the war, he married (1865) Miss Josephine McIver (born January 3, 1848), daughter of Dave and Nancy Ann McIver. William Holland and Josephine Grissett had nine children, namely: Nettie, Dave F., Ella, John, Thomas, Ophelia, Lizzie, Gooch, and Willie. Concerning these children of William H. Grissett, it is known that Nettie died April 20, 1906; she was then Mrs. T. H. Wrenn. There were no children. Dave F. Grissett married (1895) Katherine Lambert, and they now (1929) reside at Trinity, Texas, with their two children, C. R. and Thelma. Mary Ella is now Mrs. F. M. Bell of North Zulch, Texas, and is the mother of four children, namely; Ella Mae, David F., Cara Maurine, and Nettie Maurita. J. M. Grissett died (unmarried) on June 30, 1915. W. T. Grissett died in early childhood. Ophelia is now Mrs. J. D. Darby of Iola, Texas, and is the mother of one son, Harold B. Lizzie Fay now resides near Dallas, Texas. Of the other children, the writer has no information. (All of the information regarding the Grissetts was given to the writer by Mrs. Josephine Grissett of North Zulch in a letter dated July 28, 1928.)

in the fall of 1836.²¹⁴ His application for land was dated 1824, and in it, he gives his age as twenty-one years, and says that he came to Texas from Ohio.²¹⁵

Patrick C. Jack.—The Jack family was one of the many Irish families who came to America during the colonial period and quickly developed into typical pioneers. Patrick Jack (born September 19, 1700, at Derry Ireland; died in 1785, at Charlotte, North Carolina), the son of a Patrick Jack (born at Edinburg, Scotland, December 3, 1678; died 1726), and the grandson of Jacob Jack. He (Patrick Jack) came to America from Ireland about 1730,²¹⁶ and at the commencement of the Revolutionary War was living in the little town of Charlotte, Mecklenburg county, North Carolina, where he and his son, Captain James Jack, owned the most valuable lots of the town. They resided, when the delegates from the military districts of the county assembled on the nineteenth and twentieth of May, 1775, on the corner next to the court house, and kept a public house of entertainment. Here Patrick died during the latter part of, or immediately following the American Revolution.²¹⁷ His wife was formerly Miss Lille McAdoo,

²¹⁴*Abstract Land Titles*, I, 604. *Zuber to Buffington*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

²¹⁵*Application for Land*, 55. General Land Office Records, at Austin, Texas. The only thing that makes the writer think that there is a possibility of this James Holland not being the son of Francis Holland, is the fact that he says that he came from Ohio, while, according to Zuber, the other Hollands came from Louisiana. It could very easily be, however, that the Hollands came from Ohio to Louisiana, or that Zuber was mistaken.

²¹⁶*J. V. Thompson to Mrs. W. W. Lott*, June 22, 1927.

²¹⁷Captain Guy Jack's "Iconoclast"—*Biographical Sketch*. This was furnished the writer by Dr. Lovett, President of Rice Institute, Houston, Texas. Dr. Lovett's wife is indirectly related to the Jack family. The following is a quotation from the Sketch by Captain Guy Jack:

"One the 26th day of September, 1780, Lord Cornwallis, elated with the victory at Camden, entered Charlotte, with the confident expectation of soon restoring North Carolina to the British crown. Captain Jack (Patrick) was then an old and infirm man, having given up the chief control of his public house to his son, Capt. James

also of Irish descent, and they had a large family, consisting of four sons and five daughters, namely: James, John, Robert, Samuel, Charity, Jane, Mary, Margaret, and Lillis.²¹⁸ Of these children, we are here primarily interested in James Jack, for it was his great-grand-sons who came to Texas in 1831. The following quotation is taken from Captain Guy Jack's "Iconoclast." The facts here given indicate very clearly the important part played by James Jack during the American Revolutionary period:

"At the convention of delegates in Charlotte on the 19th and 20th of May, 1775, Captain James Jack was one of the deeply interested spectators, and shared in the patriotic feelings of that ever memorable occasion. He was then about 40 years of age,—brave, energetic and ready to engage in any duty having for its object the welfare and independence of his country.

"For his well-known bravery and determination of character he was selected to be the bearer of the Mecklenburg declaration of Independence to Congress, then in session in Philadelphia, Penn. He set out from Charlotte on that long, lonesome and perilous journey on horseback. . . .

"Upon his arrival he immediately obtained an interview with the North Carolina delegates (Caswell, Hooper and Hughes), and drew from his pocket, the Mecklenburg resolution of May the 20th, 1775, and handed them with the remark, 'Here, Gentlemen, is a paper that I have been instructed to deliver to you, with the request that you should lay the same before Congress.'

Jack; but neither age nor infirmity could enlist the sympathies of the British soldiery. The patriotic character of the house had become extensively known through Tory information, and its destruction was consequently, a 'foregone conclusion.' The British soldiers removed its aged owner from the feather bed upon which he was lying, emptied its contents into the street, and then set fire to the house. The reason assigned for this incendiary act was, 'all of old Jack's sons were in the rebel army.' "

²¹⁸J. V. Thompson to Mrs. W. W. Lott, dated June 22, 1927. Both J. V. Thompson and Mrs. W. W. Lott are descendants of the Patrick Jack mentioned above. This letter is written as a result of investigation made by J. V. Thompson.

"After the North Carolina delegates had carefully read the Mecklenburg resolutions and approved of their patriotic sentiments so forcibly expressed, they informed Captain Jack that they did not think Congress was prepared to act upon so important a matter as absolute independence.

"Captain Jack had another interview with the North Carolina delegates. They informed him that they had consulted with several members of the Congress, including Hancock, Jay and Jefferson, and that they all agreed while they greatly approved of the patriotic spirit of the Mecklenburg resolutions, it would be, in their judgment, premature to lay them officially before the House, as they still entertained some hopes of a reconciliation with England.

"Captain Jack finding the darling object of his long and toilsome journey could not then be accomplished, and that Congress was not then ready to vote on so bold a matter as absolute independence, just before leaving Philadelphia for home, somewhat excited, addressed the North Carolina delegates and several other members of Congress in the following patriotic words: 'Gentlemen: You may debate here about reconciliation and memorialize your King, but bear it in mind, Mecklenburg, owes no allegiance to, and is separated from the Crown of Great Britain forever.'

"Captain Jack entered the service in command of a company and acted in that capacity with distinguished bravery throughout the war under Colonels Polk, Alexander and other officers. He uniformly declined promotion when tendered, there being strong reciprocal attachment between himself and his command, which he highly appreciated and did not wish to sunder. At the commencement of the war he was in 'easy and rather affluent circumstances'—at its close comparatively a poor man. Prompted by patriotic feelings for the final prosperity of his country still struggling for independence, he loaned to the state of North Carolina, in her great pecuniary need \$20,000.00 for which unfortunately, he nor any descendant of his, has ever been paid a cent in return."

The writer does not vouch for the authenticity of the state.

ments made in the above quotation. Soon after the close of the Revolutionary War, Captain James Jack moved from Charlotte, North Carolina, to Wilkes county, Georgia. In 1813 and 1814, he was living in Elbert county, Georgia. He married (November 20, 1766) Miss Margaret Houston by whom he had five children, namely: Cynthia (born September 20, 1767), Patrick (born September 27, 1769), William Houston (born June 6, 1771), Archibald (born April 20, 1773), and James (born September 20, 1775).²¹⁹ Patrick Jack, eldest son of James and Margaret Jack, served in the United States army during the war of 1812 with rank of colonel, and was in command of the Eighth Regiment, United States Infantry, stationed at Savannah, Georgia. It is said that he frequently represented the county of Elbert in the Senate of North Carolina.²²⁰ Patrick Jack was the father of eight children, six sons and two daughters, of whom the writer has the names of four, namely: Patrick, Junior, William H., James W. (the eldest), and Archibald (born November 14, 1819; died March 14, 1833).²²¹ Patrick Jack (son

²¹⁹*Mrs. W. W. Lott to E. L. Blair*, dated July 1, 1928, at Navasota, Texas. The oldest son of Archibald Churchill Jack was Samuel M. Jack (born March 13, 1848; died July 12, 1913) who married Miss Carrie DeMaret (born January 12, 1853; died January 12, 1899), daughter of Captain Edgar DeMaret, by whom he had five children, namely: Archie DeMaret (born September 22, 1875) now at Tulsa, Oklahoma; Clara Belle (born March 29, 1881), now Mrs. W. W. Lott of Navasota, Texas; Edgar, now at Darby, Pennsylvania; Elice Navarre (born May 30, 1888), now Mrs. H. W. Steele of Houston, Texas; and Cornelia (born December 31, 1894), now Mrs. James W. Trotter of Amarillo, Texas.

²²⁰*J. V. Thompson to Mrs. W. W. Lott*, dated June 22, 1927; *Wheeler, A. H., to E. L. Blair*, April 27, 1929, in which is a copy of a part of Captain Guy Jack's "Iconoclast."

²²¹*A. H. Wheeler to E. L. Blair*, dated at Houston, Texas, April 27, 1929. Wheeler is secretary to President Lovett of Rice Institute, and in this letter inclosed a lengthy quotation from Captain Guy Jack's "Iconoclast," in which is given a biographical sketch of the Jack family, to whom Mrs. Dr. Lovett is indirectly related. Also, *J. V. Thompson to Mrs. W. W. Lott*, dated June 22, 1927. Mrs. W. W. Lott is a granddaughter of the Archibald Churchill Jack, mentioned above, and now resides at Navasota, Texas.

of Patrick Jack) married a Miss Spencer by whom he had six sons, namely: James, William H., Patrick C., Spencer H., Abner, and Churchill. Three of these boys, William H., Patrick C., and Spencer H., came to Texas in 1830.²²² William H. Jack (born April 12, 1806; died of yellow fever in Galveston, Texas, August 24, 1844) was reared and educated in Georgia, graduating from the University of that state in 1827. Having studied law, he began the practice of same at Tuscaloosa, Alabama, in 1828, and, in the following year, was elected a member of the Alabama state Legislature. In 1830, he established himself at San Felipe de Austin, Texas, where he continued his profession. When Patrick C. Jack, and others, were imprisoned at Anahuac, in 1832, William H. Jack organized a party for their release. William Jack is said to be the author of the "Turtle Bayou Resolutions." He joined the Texas army in 1835, and served in the Battle of San Jacinto in 1836 as a private soldier.²²³ William H. Jack was appointed Secretary of State in Burnet's cabinet, serving until October, 1836, after which he was a member of the lower house of the First Congress of the Republic of Texas. He later served in the Senate of the Seventh and Eighth Congresses, being Chairman of the Judiciary Committee.²²⁴ William H. Jack married Laura Harrison, sister to James T. Harrison, of Columbus, Mississippi, the lawyer whom President Davis selected to defend him in 1865. Three

²²²Captain Guy Jack's "Iconoclast," also, Fulmore, *The History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 186-188.

²²³Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 186-188. *Index of Texas Revolutionary Soldiers*, in the State Library, Austin, Texas. He is here listed as being under Captain Patton, Fourth Company, Second Regiment, Texas Volunteers.

²²⁴*Ibid.*

children were born to William H., and Laura Jack, namely: Hallie, Laura, and Thomas M.²²⁵

Patrick C. Jack (brother to William H. Jack) is the only member of the Jack family to own land in what is now Grimes county. His one-quarter league grant is situated in the vicinity of the present town of Anderson and was patented April 6, 1831.²²⁶ His application is dated in April, 1831, in which it is seen that he was then twenty-four years old, single, and from the state of Alabama.²²⁷ It seems that he had been practicing law in Jefferson county, Alabama, for three years prior to his coming to Texas. The writer has found no record of Patrick C. Jack ever having resided within the present limits of Grimes county. Upon his arrival in Texas, he located, first at Anahuac, and later at San Felipe de Austin. His imprisonment at Anahuac, as a result of his protest against the conduct of Bradburn, and his subsequent release by armed Texans, is well known to all students of Texas history. When the Revolution began, in 1835, he promptly volunteered and commanded a company during the storming of Bexar. In December, he was elected to the lower house of the Second Congress of the Republic of Texas (1838-1839) and, in 1841, was appointed District Judge of the Sixth

²²⁵Captain Guy Jack's "Iconoclast." Laura married Guy M. Bryan (he was a member of Congress before the Civil War, and Speaker of the House in Texas, 1875) and they have a son, Guy M. Bryan, now residing at Houston, Texas. Hallie married W. P. Ballinger, who then resided at Galveston, Texas. A daughter, Mrs. Dr. Edward Randall, is now living at Galveston, Texas. Colonel Thomas M. Jack graduated in law from Yale University; served on the Staff of General Albert Sidney Johnston during the Civil War. After the Civil War Colonel Thomas M. Jack resided at Galveston, Texas, where he practiced law as a member of the firm of Ballinger, Jack, and Mott.

²²⁶*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. Guy M. Jack says that the three Jack Brothers came to Texas in 1831. Fulmore, however, says that Patrick C. came in 1832.

²²⁷*Application for Land*, 95. Of record in the General Land Office, Austin, Texas.

District of Texas, in which position he was serving when he was stricken with yellow fever, from which he died in Houston, Texas on August 4, 1844.²²⁸ The writer has no record of the family of Patrick C. Jack, but understands that Harry Jack, of Corsicana, Texas, is a descendant.²²⁹ The other Jack brother, Spencer H., who came to Texas with William H., and Patrick C., died young and left no descendants.²³⁰

Isaac Jackson.—The writer has been unable to get comprehensive information concerning the family of the Isaac Jackson who, with his wife, Simantha (possibly Samantha), made application for land in Texas under date of December, 1827. In his application, he stated that he was thirty-two years of age, and that his wife was thirty, and that they came to Texas from Ohio. No children are given.²³¹ He was granted one league, situated in the southwestern part of what is now Grimes county, along the east bank of the Brazos river, patent to which was dated August 7, 1824.²³² (There is evidently an error in these dates, as his application was not made until 1827). It is said that Isaac Jackson was born in Alabama, and that, as a young man, he served with General Andrew Jackson, in the battle of New Orleans. He was known to his friends as "Old Hickory" because of the above experiences. The writer finds nothing to indicate that Isaac Jackson

²²⁸Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 186-188. Captain Guy M. Jack's "Iconoclast." *Mrs. W. W. Lott to E. L. Blair*, dated July 1, 1928. The writer finds it claimed by some that Patrick C. Jack was in the Battle of San Jacinto, but his name does not appear on the roll known as *The Index of Texas Revolutionary Soldiers*, of record in the State Library, Austin, Texas.

²²⁹*Mrs. W. W. Lott to E. L. Blair*, dated July 1, 1928.

²³⁰*Ibid.*

²³¹*Application for Land*, 63. General Land Office of Texas, at Austin.

²³²*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

was related to the family of the famous Andrew Jackson.²³³ Seven children were born to Isaac and Simantha Jackson, namely: Elbert, Henry, Isaac, Job, Martha, Lettie, and another whose name the writer does not have, known by her nick-name "Puss".²³⁴ There are many references in the Austin Papers to Jacksons in Texas, but the writer finds in them no mention of Isaac Jackson of Grimes county. Job and Isaac, sons of Isaac and Simantha Jackson, served in Company G, Fourth Regiment of Hood's Texas Brigade, during the Civil War. Job lost his right leg at the battle of Sharpsburg.²³⁵

²³³*H. T. Tucker to E. L. Blair*, dated at Plantersville, Texas, August 1, 1928. Mr. H. J. Tucker was personally acquainted with the sons of Isaac Jackson.

²³⁴*H. T. Tucker to E. L. Blair*, dated at Plantersville, Texas, August 1, 1928. Elbert Jackson committed suicide and left no heirs. Henry Jackson married Henrietta Tims about 1857, but left no children. Isaac Jackson, Junior, married Mrs. Harry Allford, formerly Miss Thaney Roberts, daughter of Green Roberts; there were no children. Job Jackson died unmarried. Martha Jackson married Walter White and moved to Brazos county. Mr. Tucker knows of no descendants. Lettie Jackson married Marshall Stephenson, by whom she had eight children, namely: Jesse (died in San Antonio about 1885), Marshall (died in the nineties, unmarried), Sarah, Zilla, James, Bart, Jeff, and William M. Concerning these children of Lettie and Marshall Stephenson, it is known that they all died unmarried except Sarah, Zilla, Jeff, and William H. Sarah married Tom Winfrey and they moved to San Antonio. Zilla (found also as Dilla) married Cyrus Williams and moved to Milam county (Mrs. Ella Stephenson says that she thinks they moved to Milam county) where they raised a large family. Jeff Stephenson is said to be now living in San Antonio, Texas. He has two sons, namely: Dan, now living near Wharton, Texas; and Walter, now living in California. William H. Stephenson married Ella Hunt, daughter of Leslie Hunt. Mrs. Ella Stephenson now resides at Plantersville, Texas, and it is to her the writer is indebted for most of the information given above. She has four children now living, namely: William, now married and living at Plantersville, Texas. (His wife was formerly Miss Carry Chandler); Baker, who married Helen Goodman, and now resides at Plantersville; Earnest, now residing at Plantersville; and Ella, now Mrs. Bletch of Goose Creek, Texas. "Puss," the youngest daughter of Isaac and Simantha Jackson, married a man by the name of Perry and moved to another section of the state. *Mrs. Ella Stephenson to E. L. Blair*, dated at Plantersville, Texas, August 1, 1928.

²³⁵*Muster Roll of Fourth Regiment, Company G, Hood's Texas Brigade*, of record in the archives of the State Library, Austin, Texas. Also see *The Grimes County Greys*, Appendix.

Timothy Jones.—The writer has no data regarding Timothy Jones other than what is given by his land application. This shows that he was then married, his wife's name being Genet, and had a family of seven children, three sons and four daughters. The application also shows that he came to Texas from Kentucky, and that Timothy was a farmer by occupation. His application was dated in April, 1835.²³⁶ His grant was for one league, situated in the northern part of the present county of Grimes, patent to which was dated October 24, 1835.²³⁷ No mention is found of a Timothy Jones in the Austin Papers.²³⁸

Anthony D. Kennard.—The Kennard family was one of Scotch origin, and came to America from Scotland during the colonial period. The writer has no information about the family prior to the arrival of Anthony D. Kennard in Texas about 1832. His application for land is of record in the General Land Office of Texas, but no date is given. This application shows Anthony D. Kennard to have been forty-five years old, and his wife, Sarah, to have been forty-two years of age. They then had seven children, and are listed as having come to Texas from Arkansas.²³⁹ They were granted one

²³⁶ *Applications for Land*, 21. Of record in the General Land Office, at Austin, Texas.

²³⁷ *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²³⁸ Barker, *The Austin Papers, Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II. The writer finds mention of a Henry Jones, pages 773 and 1454; James Jones, page 1055; James W. Jones, page 748; John Jones, pages 773, 782, 830, 938, 39, and 340; John Rice Jones, pages 29, 32, 39, and in many other connections; Oliver Jones, 1306 and in several other places; Randal Jones, pages 749, 760, 809, and elsewhere; Ronald Jones, page 924; William Jones, pages 1515 and 1600.

²³⁹ *Application for Land*, 29. General Land Office of Texas, at Austin, Texas. The land applications show Kennard to have come to Texas from Arkansas; his descendants, however, insist that he came from Alabama; he possibly moved from Alabama to Arkansas, and then to Texas. *Zuber to Lubbock*, dated February 28, 1899, and published in the *Proceedings of the Texas Veterans*, 1899, 10.

league of land, situated about eight miles northeast of the present town of Anderson, in Grimes county, patent to which was dated, November 22, 1832.²⁴⁰ The Kennard men apparently took little interest in the political affairs of the colony, but participated actively in the military activities of the period. Anthony D. Kennard served in the Texas army on an Indian campaign in 1835, in Captain Coleman's Company, of Colonel John H. Moore's Regiment. Four of Anthony D. Kennard's sons were in the Texas army during the revolution against Mexico, namely: William E., A. D., Mark L., and Mike M.²⁴¹ Anthony D. and Sarah Kennard had eight children, namely: Mark L. (born July 24, 1821 in Alabama; died April 23, 1897, at Roan's Prairie, Grimes county), William E. (born July 16, 1815; died February 14, 1899, at Cleburne, Texas), A. D., Mike M., John R., Rachel, Virginia, and two other daughters who died in childhood at ages eleven and thirteen, respectively.²⁴² Mark L. Kennard, after serving as a volunteer in the Texas Revolutionary Army, continued to make his home in Grimes county until his death in April of 1897. Both he and his wife are buried at Roan's Prairie, in Grimes county. His wife was formerly Miss Helen Walker (born in Greensboro, Alabama; died September,

²⁴⁰*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁴¹*Zuber to Lubbock*, dated February 28, 1899, published in the *Proceedings of the Texas Veterans*, 1899, 10. The writer finds no record of any Kennard in the *Index of Texas Revolutionary Heroes*, of record in the archives of the State Library, Austin, Texas. The name of William E. Kennard, however, appears on the roll of Texas Veterans for 1892. He then registered as residing in Johnson county, Texas. On the roll for the following year, appears the names of both William E. Kennard and Mark L. Kennard. *Proceedings of Texas Veterans 1892 and 1893*, pages 3-7, and 8-14, respectively.

²⁴²*Judge J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated at Anderson, Texas, June 11, 1928. *Zuber to Lubbock*, dated at Iola, Texas, February 28, 1899, and published in the *Proceedings of Texas Veterans*, 1899, 10. *Probate Minutes of Grimes County, Texas*, L, 35.

1897, at Anderson, Texas) daughter of Buck Walker, who resided at Roan's Prairie. They had six children, namely: William W., Mike, Permelia, Sallie, Martha, Mary, and A. D.²⁴³ William E. Kennard, eldest son of Anthony D. and

²⁴³William W. Kennard, son of Mark L. and Helen Kennard, now resides at Houston, Texas. He married Fannie Gooch, daughter of Abraham Gooch, and sister to Oscar Gooch of Navasota, Texas. His wife died in 1897, having been the mother of five children, namely: Myra, now the wife of Judge Hood Boone, at Edinburg, Texas; Frank, now Mrs. H. Redford of Navasota, Texas; Helen, died at the age of thirty years, unmarried; Hortence, now Mrs. Guy Foster of Houston, Texas; Willie, now of Houston, Texas. William W. Kennard's second wife was Callie Davis, daughter of Green Davis, by whom he had three sons, namely: Green D., Marcus, and Wilbur, all of whom now reside at Houston, Texas. Mike Kennard, second son of Mark L. and Helen, died in 1881. He was then about twenty-one years old. Permelia (died April, 1888) married Jim Hixson and was the mother of two children, namely: Mark L. Hixson, now of Anderson, Texas; and Helen, now Mrs. H. R. Jones of Bedias, Texas. Sallie (died 1889) married (1888) Mac Lindley of Navasota, Texas. There were no children. Martha is now Mrs. W. S. McIntire of Anderson, Texas, and is the mother of five children, namely: Eugene Kennard, now at Richards, Texas; Dr. Jesse Randolph, now at Houston, Texas; William S., now at Navasota, Texas; Florence, now Mrs. J. P. Stanford, Houston, Texas; and Dr. Harold Walker, at Sweetwater, Texas. Mary, daughter of Mark L., is now Mrs. Will Gillespie of Houston. Her husband was killed by Lester Taylor in 1909. She is the mother of two sons and four daughters, namely: Jack, Kennard (both now at Houston), Christine, now Mrs. Lewis Daab of League City, Texas; Ruby, now Mrs. J. N. Parson; Addine, now Mrs. Glynn Eggertt, and Martha, now Mrs. Frank Hall. The three last named all now reside at Houston, Texas. A. D. Kennard (born January 21, 1874, in Grimes county) now resides at Anderson, Texas, and is engaged in the stock business. He married Louella Wood (born February 1, 1877, near Willis, Texas) daughter of Cummings Wood, formerly of Walker county, Texas. They married on December 16, 1894, and have had six children, namely: Lockett (born September 1, 1895), Cummings (born December 10, 1897), Anthony Drew (born November 12, 1900; died June 9, 1904), Evelyn (born August 12, 1904; died September 30, 1905), Minnie (born April 14, 1907), and Carroll (born July 12, 1911). Lockett Kennard married (December 24, 1914) Essie Farquhar, daughter of Edward Farquhar, formerly of Navasota, Texas. They have one son, Edward, now about nine years of age. Cummings Kennard married Ruth Johnson, daughter of E. T. Johnson of Galveston, where Cummings and his wife now reside. Minnie is now Mrs. Leslie Williams of Anderson, Texas. Both she and her husband are popular school teachers of Grimes county, and the writer is greatly indebted to them for their assistance in securing the data here given. Carroll Kennard, lives with his parents at

Sarah Kennard, is said to have served in the Texas Army against the Indians in the Tidwell Campaign of 1840; as a volunteer in the San Jacinto Campaign in 1836; in the Kiell Campaign of 1839; and in the expedition against the Vasquez invasion of 1842; and was elected captain of the militia in 1841.²⁴⁴ He married a Miss Robertson (sister of Mrs. A. M. Womack) but the marriage was an unhappy one and separation took place after the birth of four children, namely: John, Rachel, Dolly, and William.²⁴⁵ This family moved to Johnson county years ago (William E. registered from there in 1892).²⁴⁶ Anthony D. Kennard, Junior, son of the colonist, Anthony D. Kennard, also served in the Texas army during the struggle for independence.²⁴⁷ He married (1838) Sarah Smith (born March 23, 1821, at Greensboro, Alabama), by whom he had three children, namely: Rachel Virginia (died October, 1883); Mark F. (died January 17, 1928), and Nannie (died January, 1902).²⁴⁸ This family of Kennards moved

Anderson, Texas. He graduated from the Navasota high school in the spring of 1929.

The data given above was furnished the writer by Mrs. Minnie (Kennard) Williams, who co-operated with the writer in passing a questionnaire around to the older members of the Kennard family. Questionnaire is dated January 13, 1929.

²⁴⁴*Zuber to Lubbock*, dated at Iola, Texas, February 28, 1899, and published in the *Proceedings of the Texas Veterans, 1899*, 10. William E. Kennard is listed as a member of the Texas Veterans Association for the years 1892 and 1893. The writer has no other data to verify the above.

²⁴⁵John Kennard, son of William E. Kennard, now resides at Clyde, Texas. Rachel married Tom Smith. Dolly married William Moore. Both are now dead and the writer has no information of any children left by either. William, their younger brother, is also dead. *Minnie Kennard to E. L. Blair*, dated January 13, 1929.

²⁴⁶*Proceedings of the Texas Veteran Association for 1892*, 3-7.

²⁴⁷*Zuber to Lubbock*, dated at Iola, Texas, February 28, 1899, published in the *Proceedings of the Texas Veteran Association for 1899*, 10.

²⁴⁸*Judge J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated at Anderson, June 11, 1928. Also, *Minnie Kennard to E. L. Blair*, dated January 13, 1929. Rachel Virginia Kennard married T. M. Westbrook. Nannie married M. (Pid) Hart. The writer has no information as to their children.

from Grimes to Johnson county, Texas, about 1850. There A. D. Kennard gained prominence as a farmer, stockman, and banker. Mike M. Kennard, son of the original Anthony D. Kennard, as stated above, rendered military service to Texas, during the revolutionary period.²⁴⁹ He later married a Miss Womack, daughter of A. M. Womack, formerly of the Apolonia community in Grimes county. Five children were born to them, namely: Anthony D. (died while in the Southern army during the Civil War), Mary, A. W., John H., and another daughter whose name the writer does not have.²⁵⁰

²⁴⁹*Zuber to Lubbock*, dated at Iola, Texas, February 28, 1899, and published in the *Proceedings of the Texas Veteran Association for 1899*, 10. *Judge J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated January 13, 1929, in which Judge McDonald states that he remembers when Mike M. Kennard used to attend the meetings of the Veteran Association.

²⁵⁰*Muster Roll of the Fourth Regiment, Company G., Hood's Texas Brigade*, of record in the archives of the State Library, Austin, Texas. Copy of this Muster Roll is found in the appendix of this volume. Mary Kennard married Rock Roberts and resided at Cypress, Texas, until her death. She was the mother of four children whose names the writer does not have. A. W. Kennard (born December 21, 1849; died about 1911) married a Miss Forrester, daughter of William Forrester, by whom he had one child, Edna, now Mrs. Jim Jones of Fort Worth, Texas. The second wife of A. W. Kennard was Miss Lizzie Terrell, by whom he had five children, namely: John, Lock, Lydia, and A. W., Junior, and another daughter whose name the writer does not have, but who is now Mrs. Shields Norwood of Austin, Texas. The widow, Mrs. A. W. Kennard, also resides at Austin, Texas. John H. Kennard, brother of A. W. Kennard, is now a merchant at Anderson, Texas. He was tax collector of Grimes county for a term of four years, beginning in 1890. He married Mattie Brown, daughter of G. W. Brown, by whom he has five children, namely: Hiram, G. Brown, Mary Lou, Stella, and Lizzie. G. Brown Kennard is now a banker at Anderson, Texas. He married Lillian Campbell, daughter of W. L. Campbell. They have one son, A. John Kennard, who is employed in the bank with his father. Mary Lou resides with her parents at Anderson, Texas. Stella is now Mrs. Gary Thomas of Anderson, Texas. She is the mother of three sons, whose names, however, the writer does not have. Lizzie is now Mrs. T. Jack Hearst of Anderson, Texas, and is the mother of one son. The above data is taken from the following: *Minnie Kennard to E. L. Blair*, dated January 13, 1929; *Judge J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated June 11, 1928; and *J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated January 13, 1920.

John R. Kennard, the youngest son of Anthony D. Kennard, the colonist, was too young to serve in the army of the Republic of Texas. When the Civil War came, however, he enlisted, and was promoted to the rank of Major in General Pat Cleburne's Division.²⁵¹ At the time of his death, in 1884, he was serving as District Judge for this district, which office he had held for about four years.²⁵² John R. Kennard married Sallie Nobles, daughter of Judge Nobles of Houston, Texas. They had four children, namely: Mary, Ed, John, and Lucy.²⁵³ Rachel Kennard, the only daughter of the elder Anthony D. Kennard, married (by bond in 1833 or 1834) Henry Fanthorp, an Englishman who came to Texas, direct from England, about 1832. Henry Fanthorp is one of the most interesting characters connected with the early history of Grimes county. He had been married twice in England. When death claimed his second wife and an only son, he determined to start life anew in the province of Texas. He arrived at Washington, Texas, sometime in the year 1832, and, after a short time, purchased from Francis Holland at a price of twenty-five cents per acre, eleven hundred and seven acres of land. He erected a log house, the ruins of which still stand, being used today by Judge J. G. McDonald as a corn crib. As a true Englishman, Fanthorp at once began to deal in merchandise, buying and selling corn, using his house for a crib and sleeping, for the most part, out of doors. In the spring of 1834, Fanthorp built a new and much larger house. This time care was taken to select a beautiful clump

²⁵¹Zuber to Lubbock, dated at Iola, Texas, February 28, 1899, and published in the *Proceedings of the Texas Veteran Association for 1899*, 10.

²⁵²Judge J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, dated at Navasota, Texas, January 13, 1929.

²⁵³J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, June 11, 1928. Minnie Kennard to E. L. Blair, January 13, 1929.

of trees for the site. A comfortable log dwelling with a rock chimney at each end was erected. Upon the completion of the new house, the wedding with Miss Rachel Kennard was celebrated. The couple soon found themselves in the hotel business, and Fanthorp enlarged the dwelling so as to make a spacious tavern, known as the Fanthorp Inn. Many interesting events and stories cluster around this old tavern.²⁵⁴ Here, in 1835, when the Provisional Government established a weekly mail route between San Felipe de Austin and Nacogdoches, was established the first post office in what is now Grimes county, with Fanthorp as the name of the office and Henry Fanthorp as the post master.²⁵⁵ Here, in 1837, Fanthorp, with his brother-in-law, Mike M. Kennard, and Abraham Womack, established the first mercantile firm to do business in what is now Grimes county. They purchased a ten thousand dollar stock of merchandise in New Orleans, freighted the goods to Fanthorp and operated under the firm name of Fanthorp, Womack & Kennard. Here two of the most important stage lines of this section of Texas crossed, and maintained stage stands across from the tavern, where three times a week each stage stopped, watered, or exchanged teams, and made necessary repairs, while the passengers refreshed themselves at the tavern. One of these stage lines ran from Houston to Old Springfield; the other from Nacogdoches to Austin. Sam Houston was often a visitor and the Fanthorp descendants like to tell of the time when one of

²⁵⁴*Zuber to Buffington*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903. Helen Greenwood, *History of Anderson*. This essay was prepared by Miss Greenwood, daughter of Dr. W. W. Greenwood, of Navasota, Texas, and submitted in the Local Historical Essay Contest sponsored by the University of Texas in 1925, in which it won honorable mention. Julia Rochelle, "Here Texas' Great Men Once Lodged," *The Dallas Morning News*, October 25, 1925.

²⁵⁵*Ibid.*

Queen Victoria's maids of honor stopped over for a rest and talked with Fanthorp, far into the night, concerning affairs in England. The visitor was the Honorable Amelia M. Murray who published *Letters from the United States, Cuba, and Canada*, New York, 1856. She stopped at Washington, Independence, Huntsville, and Crockett, but makes no mention of having stopped at Fanthorp. The writer is indebted to Mr. E. W. Winkler, Librarian of the University of Texas, for the information about Murray. At this inn died Kenneth L. Anderson, the last Vice President of the Republic of Texas, and he was buried with Masonic honors across the road from the old tavern in the Fanthorp cemetery. When the new county was created by the First State Legislature of Texas in 1846, it was decided to name the new county seat in honor of this Kenneth L. Anderson, and a memorial slab in his honor found in the county court house at Anderson. In 1839, Fanthorp purchased a new tract of land fronting his tract on the north and surveyed a new townsite. Several lots were sold and the new town was named "Alta Mira," Spanish words, meaning "High View." This town was later absorbed by the new county seat, Anderson, located on a tract of land, donated by Fanthorp, and adjoining Alta Mira. The manner of selecting this location for the new county seat is explained elsewhere in this thesis. Another important event at Fanthorp's Inn was the visit of General Zachary Taylor and his army as they passed through on their march to the Mexican border in 1846. A formal dinner was served the General and his officers, while the soldiers were provided with refreshments from improvised tables and stands under the nearby trees.²⁵⁶

²⁵⁶J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, dated at Anderson, Texas, June 11, 1928. Helen Greenwood, *History of Anderson*. Julia Rochelle, "Here Texas' Great Men Once Lodged," *Dallas Morning News*, October 25, 1925. Zuber to Bufington, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

Henry Fanthorp and Rachel Kennard had three children, namely: John, Mary A. (died May 2, 1902), and another who died in early childhood. John married Sallie Moore, but died soon after the marriage, leaving no children. Mary A. Fanthorp married (1863) Major William M. Stone (died October 8, 1872), who had served on the staff of General Walker during the Civil War.²⁵⁷ William M. and Mary A. Stone had five children, namely: Annie B., Eleanor, Julia, William M., and Henry Fanthorp.²⁵⁸

²⁵⁷*Judge J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated June 11, 1928. Judge McDonald says that he secured the above information regarding Fanthorp from his father, James Green McDonald, Senior, but that he remembers Fanthorp, who died when he (Judge McDonald) was a very small lad.

²⁵⁸*J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated June 11, 1928; also *J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated January 13, 1929. Annie B. Stone married (1887) Charles B. Kettler, an attorney who formerly practiced at Navasota, Texas. The writer has no information as to their present whereabouts, nor of their children, except to know that there was one daughter named Maria. Eleanor Stone (died January 25, 1903) married James Green McDonald (born September 11, 1858) by whom she had one daughter, Mary Eleanor (died June 15, 1903). The husband, Judge James Green McDonald, never married again. He still resides in Grimes county, and has been one of her most useful citizens, holding today the love and respect of his fellow citizens. He is the son of James Green McDonald, Senior, the grandson of Henry Brown McDonald, of North Carolina; great-grandson of the Hugh McDonald of North Carolina, who, during the American Revolution was a member of Marion's Band. Henry Brown McDonald, grandfather of Judge J. G. McDonald of Anderson, Texas, served as Colonel under General Andrew Jackson, during a part of the War of 1812, and was wounded in the battle of Muckfall (with the Indians) a short time before the Battle of New Orleans. The father of Judge J. G. McDonald, J. G. McDonald, Senior, was the son of Henry Brown McDonald and Mary Crowder. He (James Green McDonald, Senior) was one of a family of eight children, namely: Malvina, Minto, Darthula, N. Brown, La Fayette, Brown, and William Henry. James Green McDonald (born 1824; died March 11, 1903) came to Texas in 1851 and located at Austin, but in the following year, moved to Anderson, Grimes county, where he made his permanent home and reared a large family. A lawyer by profession, he was from the time of his arrival at Anderson, actively affiliated with the political life of the county and state. He served as District Attorney (1856-1860) and during this period the district extended from Madison county to Galveston and Beaumont. He was elected to the State Legislature in 1860, but resigned this position in 1861, having been appointed Brigadier General of Texas troops, by Governor Clark, which office he held for two years. In 1872, he

John Landrum.—John Landrum was the son of Zachariah and Letitia Landrum who came to Texas from Maringo county, Alabama, arriving in Texas on December 31, 1829.

was again elected District Attorney and served, this time, for four years. In 1882, he was elected to the State Senate to complete the unexpired term of J. T. Buchanan. James Green McDonald, Senior, married (February 13, 1850) Julia T. Davis of Nashville, Tennessee, from which state he came to Texas. They had ten children, namely: James Finie (died in infancy), Mary Elizabeth, Finie, James Green, Julia, William LaFayette, Alethia Allen, Emily Peyton, Grace, and Brown. Mary Elizabeth McDonald married (September 5, 1869) William W. Meachum of Anderson. Colonel William W. Meachum died at Anderson in August of 1926. He was one of the most respected citizens of Grimes county, and the writer regrets that space here will not permit of a more lengthy biographical sketch. He was the father of nine children, namely: Julia, now Mrs. Ralph Powell of Bryan, Texas; Eleanor, now of Anderson, Texas; William G., died in childhood; McDonald, now at Houston, Texas; Mary Elizabeth, now instructor in music at Sam Houston State Teachers' College, at Huntsville, Texas; Blanch, now at Anderson, Texas; Martha L., now Mrs. E. J. Palm of Austin, Texas; Clifford C., died in 1920; and Winifree W., died in 1923, at the time of his death being connected with the Attorney General's Department at Austin, Texas. He is survived by his widow, Mrs. Zoleta Meachum, and two children, namely; Winifree, and Zoleta. Finie McDonald married (1897) Etta Siddall, and moved later to Montgomery, Texas, where they now reside. Julia McDonald (died 1882) married (1878) John B. Goodlet and moved to California. She is survived by one daughter, now Mrs. A. R. (Pope) Clark of California. William McDonald married Hattie Stemmons, moved to Dallas, Texas; thence to the Klondike; thence to New York; thence to Washington, D. C., where he died June 30, 1919, being survived by no children. Alethia Allen McDonald married (1890) P. S. Halleck, educator at Ann Arbor, Michigan, where he died. His widow returned to Anderson, Texas, then moved to Temple, Texas, where she died, August 28, 1926, being survived by one daughter, Julia, the late Mrs. A. J. Albright of Kenosha, Wisconsin. She is survived by one daughter, Julia Lorraine Albright. Emily Peyton MacDonald died April 2, 1896. She was then teaching in the Dallas public schools. Grace McDonald died in infancy. Brown McDonald now resides at Dennis, Texas. He is the father of three children, namely: Alice, John, and Edith. James Green McDonald, as his father, J. G. McDonald, Senior, is a lawyer by profession and has played an active part in the public affairs of his community and state. He served as post master at Anderson, Texas, (1884-1888) during Cleveland's administration; County Attorney for Grimes county, from 1890-1892, and holds this office now, having been elected in November of 1928; County Judge for Grimes county, 1892-1896, and again, 1900-1904; represented his district in the Thirtieth, Thirty-first, and Thirty-sixth Legislatures. While in the Legislature he served on the following committees: Judiciary, for the Thirtieth and Thirty-first; Educational, in the Thirtieth and Thirty-first; Appropriation, in the Thirty-first and Thirty-sixth;

It is said that Zachariah served in the army of Texas during the revolution of 1836, but the writer has not been able to verify the claim.²⁵⁹ John Landrum's land application, dated January, 1830, shows that he was then twenty-nine years of age and his wife, Mary, was twenty-two. They had two children, a son and a daughter. The application further shows that they came to Texas from Alabama and that they owned two negro slaves.²⁶⁰ They were granted one league, situated in what is now the southwest corner of Grimes county,

Public Health, in the Thirty-sixth. He introduced the resolution to build a home for wives and widows of ex-Confederate soldiers, which building is now a reality in Austin, Texas; introduced the bill, passed by the Thirty-sixth Legislature, to pay women employees of the state on the same basis as men; sponsored the bill, passed by the Thirty-first Legislature, to pay special veniremen at the rate of one dollar per day. Judge J. G. McDonald was most active in the organization of the White Man's Union in Grimes county in 1900. He now resides alone at the old Fanthorp building. Here the writer has enjoyed many an hours' conversation with him, as we sat under the shade of the old oak trees, under which so many interesting events transpired in the early days of Grimes county, while we, now and then, refreshed ourselves from the old Fanthorp well. The writer has found no person so well informed concerning the history of this county, as Judge James Green McDonald. Indeed he has made it a study and has been considering the preparation of a county history himself. His patience and co-operation is most highly appreciated by the writer.

Julia Stone, the third child of Mary A. Fanthorp, married Jim Quincy Yarborough, Junior, by whom she had two daughters, namely: Julia, now Mrs. W. L. Garber of New York City; and Alice, now Mrs. John N. Ratcliff, of Navasota, Texas. Mr. and Mrs. W. L. Garber have one little daughter, Alice Lloyd, now (1929) about five years old. Mr. and Mrs. John N. Ratcliff have a little son, John Nobles, Junior, now (1929) about four years old. William M. Stone, Junior, married Howze Milton, daughter of Governor Milton of Florida, and the family now resides at Miriama, Florida. There are no children. Henry Fanthorp Stone died, May 12, 1894, unmarried.

²⁵⁹*Mrs. Mary Davis to E. L. Blair*, dated at Montgomery, Texas, January 12, 1929. Mrs. Davis is a great-granddaughter of Zachariah Landrum. In her letter she does not make it clear as to whether she meant the Texas Revolution, or the American Revolution, and the writer failed to receive an answer to a second inquiry. The writer finds no record of Zachariah Landrum having been in the Texas army.

²⁶⁰*Application for Land*, 61; of record in the General Land Office, Austin, Texas.

patent to which was April 10, 1831.²⁶¹ The wife of John Landrum died in Rusk county, Texas, July 5, 1859.²⁶² Their two children were Wells and Sarah. Sarah married James Devereaux. A son, William Devereaux, about eighteen years ago, lived at Jacksonville, Texas, where he was engaged in the drug business. The writer has no information concerning Wells.²⁶³

William Laughlin.—Scant information has been found concerning William Laughlin. The land application records give nothing. His grant in Grimes county is for one-quarter league, and this indicates that he was unmarried at that time. His quarter league is situated in the central-eastern portion of Grimes county, and was patented, April 11, 1831.²⁶⁴ He was elected sindico in the precinct of San Jacinto in 1831.²⁶⁵ The writer finds William Laughlin mentioned several times in the *Austin Papers*.²⁶⁶

Thomas McDonald.—The records in the Texas Land Office show that Thomas McDonald and his wife, Mary, applied for land in Austin's colony under date of May, 1835. Thomas McDonald gave his own age as forty-two years, but the

²⁶¹ *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. Sold 670 acres to Henry Griggs, October 15, 1852. *Deed Records of Grimes County*, C, 314.

²⁶² *John Landrum to Nancy Landrum* (sister-in-law), dated in Rusk county, August 20, 1859. Original of this letter is in the possession of Mrs. Mary Davis of Montgomery, Texas. *Mrs. John Landrum to John Landrum*, dated 1858, gave her age as fifty years. Original in possession of Mrs. Mary Davis, Montgomery, Texas.

²⁶³ *Mrs. Mary Davis to E. L. Blair*, dated January 12, 1929.

²⁶⁴ *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁶⁵ Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXIV, 162.

²⁶⁶ Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1373. *William Laughlin to Austin*, dated at District of San Jacinto, July 15, 1828; in which Laughlin as constable requests the aid of Austin in enforcing the law against one John D. Taylor. Under date of July 17, 1826, Laughlin again writes Austin in regard to the same matter. *Ibid.*, 1374.

age of the wife was not given. They then had two sons. He gave his occupation as farming, and stated that they came to Texas from the state of Massachusetts.²⁶⁷ His one league grant is situated in what is now the northwest portion of Grimes county, the date of his patent being, October 5, 1835.²⁶⁸ Three days later, October 8, 1835, McDonald sold half of his league to Spencer H. Jack, for Johnson, Chriesman and Company.²⁶⁹ No mention is found of Thomas McDonald in the *Austin Papers*, and the writer has no information regarding any descendants.

M. McDowell.—The records show that M. McDowell applied for land through Horatio Chriesman as agent, under date of September 22, 1835.²⁷⁰ The application gives no information concerning the family of McDowell. It seems that M. McDowell is the same as the Mill McDowell who married Katie Holland, daughter of William Holland, by whom he had two children, Sam and Elizabeth. For further information regarding these children, see footnote No. 13, above. McDowell's one league grant is situated in the northern part of Grimes county, in the vicinity of the present town of Cross, and was patented, October 17, 1835.²⁷¹

William McGuffin.—This colonist and his wife, Maryanna, were natives of Ireland. They came to Texas from the state of Tennessee. No date is given for the application; his patent however, is dated November 12, 1832. At the time he made application, McGuffin was twenty-four, and his wife seven-

²⁶⁷*Application for Land*, 63. In the General Land Office of Texas, Austin, Texas.

²⁶⁸*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁶⁹*Transcribed Deed Records of Montgomery County*, Vol. 83.

²⁷⁰*Applications for Land*, 101. In the General Land Office of Texas, at Austin, Texas.

²⁷¹*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

teen years old.²⁷² The writer finds no mention of a William McGuffin in the *Austin Papers*. There are, however, many items regarding a Hugh McGuffin who lived near Natchitoches, Louisiana, and since the name Hugh seems to have been a family name among the descendants of William McGuffin, one would infer that they were relatives.²⁷³

William and Margaret McIntire.—Margaret Fahey (born 1789, in Ireland; died 1861, in Grimes county, Texas) came to Louisiana from Ireland in 1798, where she later married Robert McIntire (born 1761 in Pennsylvania; died 1814, in 1789, in Ireland; died 1861, in Grimes county, Texas) came there originally from Scotland. They were married in 1809 at Bayou Boeff, Louisiana, and to them were born two sons, namely: William (born 1811; died 1849) and Robert (born

²⁷²*Application for Land*, 33. In the General Land Office of Texas, at Austin, Texas. Also, *Abstracts of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁷³*W. W. Williams to E. L. Blair*, dated at Conroe, Texas, December 13, 1829, writes as follows:

"My father's mother was a McGuffin and from hearing my father speak of her people, I got the impression that she had two brothers, William and Hugh, who came to Texas in the early part of the last century, but whether they or either of them formed a part of Austin's colony, I am unable to say. One of the two brothers, but which one I do not know, died in Guadalupe county sometime along about 1870, and left three sons and one daughter, if I am not mistaken, as follows: John, William, Hugh, and Elizabeth who married a man by the name of Robbins. John McGuffin died at Seguin a good many years ago and I don't think he has any descendants living. He was quite an old man when he died and was a veteran either of the Texas army of independence or of the United States army in its War with Mexico, I think the former. William McGuffin, I think, moved to Llano county and I am told died there, leaving a number of children, one named Hugh. Hugh McGuffin was one time Sheriff of Guadalupe county (probably in 1885 or 1890) and, it seems to me, I have heard that he died a few years ago, but had moved out of that county before he died.

"Now there was another McGuffin, Gordon by name, who lived, I think, in Gonzales county, and he had a sister who, if still living, is in Houston. I think Gordon McGuffin and his sister were children of the other original McGuffin. Gordon McGuffin's sister is named McLeod and she has a son in Houston, and he works or did work for the Magnolia Oil Company, as one of their office men. In the telephone directory I find the name of G. W. McLeod, whose residence is given as 915 Alston and his phone as Taylor 1429. I think he is the man, in fact I am rather certain he is, and by writing to him you can find out about where to find his mother, and by seeing her you can probably get the information you desire about William McGuffin."

The writer wrote Mr. G. W. McLeod, and tried to trace down several of the other leads given in this letter, but failed to get any response.

1812; died May 26, 1895).²⁷⁴ After the death of her husband, in 1814, Margaret McIntire, with her two sons, William and Robert, joined Austin's second group of colonists and came to Texas, in 1825. Both Margaret and her oldest son, William, applied for land. Their applications are dated in April of 1825, and show Margaret to have been thirty-eight and William twenty-three years of age. The application also shows that they came from Louisiana. Margaret is shown to have had one child, who was the younger son, Robert.²⁷⁵ William received one-quarter league and Margaret one league. Margaret's league is situated in the southeast portion of the present county of Grimes, and William's quarter league joins it on the east side. Margaret's league was patented, April 5, 1831 while William's patent is dated on the following day.²⁷⁶ Through the Margaret McIntire league runs what is known as Big Dry creek. Jesse Grimes was given a league (patented April 6, 1831) joining the Margaret McIntire league on the west,²⁷⁷ and two years later, the Margaret McIntire league line was moved back one mile so as to make room for Franklin Greenwood. These three families constituted what was the beginning of the Grimes Prairie community in Grimes county. In 1826, the McIntires erected their new dwelling which was a four-room house with a separate room for a kitchen, made of square hewn cedar logs.²⁷⁷ William McIntire married Mahala Powell, daughter of Arch Powell, who came to Texas

²⁷⁴*Mrs. W. S. D. Saunders to E. L. Blair*, dated July 3, 1928, at Navasota, Texas. Mrs. Saunders is a daughter of the Robert McIntire mentioned above, and granddaughter of the widow Margaret (Fahey) McIntire. The dates, she secured from the family records.

²⁷⁵*Applications for Land*, 69. In the General Land Office of Texas, at Austin, Texas. Margaret McIntyre's Will, of record in *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, N. 117-118.

²⁷⁶*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁷⁷*Mrs. W. S. D. Saunders to E. L. Blair*, dated July 3, 1928, at Navasota, Texas.

from Tennessee in 1834. Mahala died a few years after the marriage, leaving no children. In 1842 William married again, this time, to Margaret Anglin, daughter of Elisha Anglin, then living in Grimes Prairie. William McIntire died in 1849, at Bastrop, Texas, being survived by his widow and three children, namely: Robert, Samuel, and William.²⁷⁸ Robert McIntire, younger brother of William, married (1837) Sarah Berryman, daughter of William Berryman, then of Anderson community, the family continued to reside in Grimes county where many of the descendants are now found. There were six children born to Robert and Sarah McIntire, namely: Sarah, Margaret, Edward, John, Lawrence and Frank.²⁷⁹

²⁷⁸*Mrs. W. S. Saunders to E. L. Blair*, dated July 3, 1928, at Navasota, Texas. Also, *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, N. 117-118. Also, *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, II, 334. Concerning the children of William and Margaret (Anglin) McIntire,—Robert was killed by Indians in Utah; Samuel now lives in Salt Lake City, Utah, and so does his brother William.

²⁷⁹*Mrs. W. S. D. McIntire to E. L. Blair*, dated July 3, 1928, at Navasota, Texas. Sarah, daughter of Robert and Sarah, is now Mrs. F. B. Wasson of Navasota, Texas. She is the mother of three children, namely: Maggie (born 1876; died 1918), Le-al (died 1906), and Quantrell. Maggie was the late Mrs. W. E. Farmer of Navasota, Texas, and is survived by her husband and four children, namely: Velma (now Mrs. John Quinn), Gladys, Weldon, and Billie. Le-al died unmarried in 1906. Quantrell now resides at Navasota. He married Lucille Williams, and they have two small children. Margaret, second daughter of Robert McIntire, is now Mrs. W. S. D. Saunders of Navasota, Texas. The writer is indebted to her for most of the information given about this family, and he deeply appreciates her co-operation and patience. Mr. and Mrs. W. S. D. Saunders had three children, namely: Susie (born 1886), August (born 1890; died 1918), and Aubrey (born 1883). Susie is now Mrs. Dr. J. I. Collier of Marlin, Texas, and is the mother of two children, namely: Ivan Thayer (now about nineteen), and Margaret (now about twelve). August died with influenza at an army camp at College Station, Texas, in 1918. Aubrey was the late Mrs. J. M. Whitfield. She left no children. Edward McIntire, son of Robert and Sarah, married (1876) Emma Knott, of Harmony community in Grimes county. Both are now dead. Their children were Frank, Clifford, and Nora. Frank is now living at Shields, Texas, and has a large family. Clifford is now in California. Nora, the late Mrs. Frank Brenham, is survived by several children who are now in Oklahoma. John McIntire, son of Robert and Sarah, died while in the Confederate army, at Atlanta, Georgia, in 1863. Lawrence McIntire, brother to

Daniel B. McMahan.—No trace of any descendants of Daniel B. McMahan has been found by the writer. His application for land, dated in September, 1835, shows that he was married. His grant was for one league, which is located in what is now the northwest portion of Grimes county, and his patent was dated, October 16, 1835.²⁸⁰

William Montgomery.—In the extreme southeastern corner of Grimes county, is a one-league grant, patented to William Montgomery, under date of May 4, 1831.²⁸¹ William Montgomery's land application shows that he came to Texas from the state of Arkansas; that he was then a widower fifty-eight years old; a farmer by occupation and the father of one son. The application was dated in 1830.²⁸² There is some confusion in the mind of the writer as to the family connection between the descendants of William Montgomery. As stated above, his land application shows that he had one son. His descendants, however, say that he was the father of a large family, most of whom had married before he came to Texas. It is known that two of his daughters married Greenwood brothers, Franklin and Joel, in Tennessee. It seems that the family consisted of eight children, namely: Edley, William, Jr., Andy, Emily, Queeny, Sallie, Annie, and Mary Jane.²⁸³ Edley Montgomery married and was the father of five children:

John, was born in 1847, and died in 1909, unmarried. His brother, Frank (born 1842) died in 1873, as a result of a wound received in Georgia while he was in the Confederate army. He was unmarried.

²⁸⁰*Applications for Land*, 61. In the General Land Office of Texas, at Austin, Texas. *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁸¹*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁸²*Applications for Land*, 89. In the General Land Office of Texas, at Austin, Texas.

²⁸³*Mrs. T. L. Castle to E. L. Blair*, dated at Plantersville, Texas, August 3, 1928. *J. L. Montgomery to E. L. Blair*, dated at Richards, Texas, November 8, 1928.

namely: William, Andrew, Maggie, Nannie, and Saphronia.²⁸⁴

²⁸⁴Mrs. T. L. Castle to E. L. Blair, dated at Plantersville, Texas, August 3, 1928. Robert E. Greenwood, Junior, to E. L. Blair, dated at Navasota, Texas, August 23, 1928. William, son of Edley Montgomery, married Amanda Blount, and they had eight children, namely: Mattie, Willie, Claude, Joe, Henry, Mary, Johnie, and Lura. Of these, Henry, Mary, and Johnie died in early youth; Mattie is married and now lives at Madisonville, Texas; Willie is now living in Bell county, Texas. He married Ida Cotton and they have several children. Claude now lives at Beeville, Texas. He has been married twice; first, to Edna Hurst; his present wife was formerly Lula Watson. Joe Montgomery married Etta Williams and they now live at Beeville, Texas. Lura is now Mrs. Dollie Pool, of Houston, Texas. Andrew Montgomery, son of Edley, married a Miss Harris, sister to Jim C. Harris, who resides near Richards, Texas. They had six children, namely: Bailey, Bob, Daughy, Johnie, Kye, and "Bibbie." Bailey, Bob. Daughy, and "Bibbie" died unmarried. Johnie married Ella Urzell. They have several children living, namely; J. Lee Montgomery, now in the lumber business at Richards, Texas; Dee Montgomery, also of Richards, Texas; Lester Montgomery, now at Dacus, Texas; and Eva Lora, now Mrs. Williams of Richards, Texas. Maggie Montgomery, third child of Edley Montgomery, married (December 23, 1872) Joseph Bay, a farmer near Richards, Texas, by whom she had eight children, namely: Ada Bay, Vashti, Lela, Lola, Effie, Viola, E. P., and Elmer. Concerning these children of Maggie (Montgomery) and Joseph Bay, Ada Bay is now Mrs. John Hamlin of Conroe, Texas. She has several children. Vashti Bay is now Mrs. T. L. Castle of Plantersville, Texas, and it is to her the writer is indebted for a large part of the data given here concerning the Montgomery family. Lela Bay is now Mrs. E. L. Dyer of Stoneham, Texas. She has five children, namely: Lois, Earl, Onis, Elton, and Thelma, who is now Mrs. R. L. Warner of Twin Falls, Idaho. Lola Bay is now Mrs. E. G. Cude of Ogden, Utah. Effie, her sister, is now Mrs. W. A. Coe of Dayton, Texas. Viola Bay is now Mrs. C. M. Coe of Cleveland, Texas. Her husband, G. M. Coe, is a brother to W. A. Coe, husband of Effie, and both these men are brothers to Mrs. Oscar Coe of Navasota, Texas. E. P. Bay married Mirandy Hill. They now reside at Stoneham, Texas. Elmer Bay is now Mrs. Glynn Dablin of Salt Lake City, Utah. Nannie Montgomery, daughter of Edley Montgomery, married Billie Sims. They made their home near Richards, Texas, and had a family of four children, namely: Ben, Aubrey, Ervin, and another who died in infancy. Ben Sims is now married but the writer does not have his address. Aubry, his sister, is now married and living at Lufkin, Texas. Ervin died unmarried. (Mrs. T. L. Castle thinks he was on the steamship *Lusitania*, torpedoed by a German submarine during the World War.) Saphronia Montgomery, sister to Nannie, and daughter of Edley Montgomery, is now Mrs. Doss Wooten of Iola, Texas. She is the mother of six children, namely: Minnie, Mamie, George, Emmitt, Henry, and Amin. In connection with these children, it is known that Minnie is now married and lives at Iola, Texas; Mamie is now Mrs. Callie Harmon of Iola, Texas; George is married and lives at Iola, Texas; so does his brother Emmitt; Henry is married and resides at Humble, Texas; Amin, the youngest daughter, is now Mrs. Henry Crawford of Iola, Texas.

The writer has no information concerning William Montgomery, Jr., nor of his brother, Andy. Their sister, Emily, married William Berry, and moved from Grimes county to Waxahachie, Texas, about the year 1880. They were known to have had four children, namely: Mary, Ella, Clarence, and another daughter whose name the writer does not have. Queeny Montgomery, sister to Emily, married a Mr. Smith and she and her husband resided near Richards, where he was killed, soon after the marriage, by being thrown from a horse. There were no children. Sallie Montgomery, another daughter of William Montgomery, Sr., married Will Stoveall. They resided near Richards, Texas. There were three children, namely: Bailey, Willie, and Hattie.²⁸⁵ Annie Montgomery, sister to Sallie, married Joel Greenwood, brother to Franklin Jarvis Greenwood, the husband of Annie's sister, Mary Jane.²⁸⁶

James W. Moore.—The Land Office records show that James W. Moore and his wife, Matilda, applied for land in Austin's colony in the year 1830. James W. Moore was then thirty-three years old (no age given for Matilda) and had two sons. They came to Texas from Arkansas, and his occupation is given as farming.²⁸⁷ One league of land was granted, situated in what is now the northern part of Grimes

²⁸⁵*Mrs. T. L. Castle to E. L. Blair*, dated at Plantersville, Texas, August 3, 1928. Concerning these children of Sallie and Will Stoveall, Bailey is married, and now resides at Houston, Texas; Willie married Ada Williams, and resides at Richards, Texas; and Hattie is now Mrs. Elwood Curry of Madison county, Texas.

²⁸⁶*Ibid.* Robert E. Greenwood, *History of the Greenwoods*, in which the *Greenwood Family Bible* is cited. For additional information regarding the descendants of these two families, see page 67 of this chapter.

²⁸⁷*Land Applications*, 85. Of record in the General Land Office, Austin, Texas.

county, patent to which was dated, October 20, 1835.²⁸⁸ The writer has been unable to secure any definite information concerning the descendants of James W. Moore.

John Moore.—This colonist applied for land in April of 1830. He was then fifty-four years old, being a widower with one son and two daughters. The records show that he came to Texas from Louisiana, and that his occupation was farming.²⁸⁹ His one league grant was patented on April 15, 1831, and is located in what is now Grimes county a few miles directly south of the present town of Navasota, in the community then known as Pointer's Prairie.²⁹⁰ Here, John Moore, was associated with his son-in-law, Captain King, in the operation of two steamboats on the Brazos river. One of these boats was destroyed by fire while on the river near Old Washington the other is thought to have sunk somewhere on the Colorado river.²⁹¹ It is claimed that John Moore fought in the Texas army at the Battle of San Jacinto. The writer has been unable to verify this claim. There are a number of Moores listed as having been in the Texas army at San Jacinto.²⁹² The Moore family is said to have come to America

²⁸⁸*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁸⁹*Land Application*, 57. Of record in the General Land Office, Austin, Texas. John Moore's league of land was sold on September 19, 1845, to John H. Gordon and John F. Crawford. *Deed Records of Grimes County*, A2, 351.

²⁹⁰H. H. Boone to E. L. Blair, dated at Navasota, Texas, August 16, 1928. According to Mr. Boone, the Moore home was located between where the J. M. Garvin Dairy now stands and the city of Navasota. *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁹¹*Ibid.* Mr. H. H. Boone is a grandson of John Moore.

²⁹²*Ibid.* The writer finds the name of John H. Moore listed in the *Proceedings of the Association of Texas Veterans for 1873*. He was then residing in Fayette county. According to the above record, John H. Moore served in a military or political capacity in Texas between 1820 and 1836. No John Moore is listed in the *Index of Texas Revolutionary Heroes*, in the State Library, at Austin, Texas. There are several Moores so listed, however, and at least one has

from Ireland. The writer has no information regarding the wife of John Moore. As stated above, he was a widower when he applied for land, in 1830. No information has been found regarding his son. His two daughters were educated in a convent in Louisiana, where they seem to have spent most of their youth. One later married Captain King, mentioned above. The other was named Lidia E. Moore, and married Charles Peter Gordon from the state of New York by whom she had six children, namely: Sarah W., Elizabeth, Mary A., Sue H., Charles Peter, and W. W. The family lived in Louisiana, but four of the children came to Texas. Sarah W. Gordon married Thomas P. Miller and remained in Louisiana. Elizabeth Gordon married Captain Hugh M. King and resided at Tuskegee, Alabama. Hugh M. King at one time owned the land on which the Booker T. Washington Institute now stands. Mary A. Gordon came to Texas and died unmarried.²⁹³ Sue H. Gordon (born February 25, 1841 died; December 24, 1926) married Hannibal Honestus Boone (born February 24, 1834; died May 23, 1897, at Navasota, Texas), by whom she had ten children, namely: Hannibal Honestus (died at Navasota, Texas, in December, 1928), Mary, Susie, Evelyn, Gordon, Latham, Hood, Louise, William

no Christian name given (see appendix). This Colonel John H. Moore participated in an Indian Campaign in 1835, according to Zuber. (*Zuber to Lubbock*, dated at Iola, Texas, February 28, 1899, published in *Proceedings of the Association Texas Veterans for 1899*, 10). There is a John W. Moore mentioned as having been elected comisario for the San Jacinto precinct in 1831. With him served William Laughlin as sindico. Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXIV, 162. The Colonel John H. Moore, of Fayette county, is the grandfather of Mrs. E. G. Townsend of Belton, Texas. Mr. E. G. Townsend advises that Colonel John H. Moore is of no relation to the John Moore of Grimes county, and that he (John H. Moore) came to Texas when a young man from the state of Tennessee, in 1821, at the age of twenty-one years. *E. G. Townsend to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1929; also *Adele Henderson to E. L. Blair*, July 22, 1929.

²⁹³*H. H. Boone to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, August 16, 1928.

(born March 16, 1874; died August 6, 1874), and Thos. Green (born September 13, 1864; died September 16, 1877).²⁹⁴

²⁹⁴*Mrs. A. H. Wilson to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 27, 1928. Hannibal H. Wilson, *Biography of Hannibal Honestus Boone*, (1925). This, in manuscript form, is in the high school library at Navasota, Texas. A biographical sketch of H. H. Boone was published in the *Navasota Weekly Review*, May 27, 1897. From these sources, the writer finds, that Joseph Green Boone (died about 1871), father of Hannibal Honestus, mentioned above, was born in North Carolina, from which state she migrated to Tipton, Tennessee, in 1827; thence, in 1834, to Mississippi; thence to Texas, in 1852, at which time he settled in what is now Waller county, a few miles from the present town of Hempstead. While residing in Mississippi, Joseph Green Boone, married Harriet Latham (died 1851) by whom he had two sons, Joseph, and Hannibal Honestus (born February 24, 1834; died May 23, 1897, at Navasota, Texas). Of Joseph Boone, brother to Hannibal Honestus, the writer has no information, other than to know that he came to Texas. Hannibal H. Boone, husband of Sue H. Gordon, above, came to Texas with his father from De Sota county, Mississippi, in 1852, and lived in what was known as the Rock Island community, in what is now Waller county. Hannibal Honestus had been educated at Mountain Academy, in Tipton county, Tennessee, under the direction of Rev. Holmes; later being a student in Austin College at Huntsville, Texas, then under the direction of Rev. Daniel Bacon. While a student in Austin College, he studied law and, in 1859, began the practice of this profession at Hempstead, Texas. When the Civil War began, Hannibal Honestus Boone joined the army of the South and served on the Rio Grande in Colonel John S. Ford's regiment. He was later stationed near Galveston, and still later, served in Green's Brigade, as Major in Waller's Battalion, and as such, saw active service in Texas, Louisiana, and Arkansas. He was wounded at Fordoche, Louisiana, September 29, 1862, losing his right arm and two fingers from his left hand, after which he was sent home. Upon his arrival at home, he presented himself to General MaGruder and was assigned suitable duties until the close of the war. Soon after the Civil War, Hannibal Honestus Boone moved to Anderson, Texas, in Grimes county. Here he was active in the practice of his profession until the year 1876, when he was elected Attorney General for the state of Texas. After holding this office for one term, he made his home at Navasota, Texas, where he resided until his death, in 1897. Hannibal H. Boone was reared in the Presbyterian church but, late in life, joined the Episcopal church. (The writer has not examined original sources to verify the above statements, but gives such information as was obtained from the sources indicated at the beginning of this note). Hannibal Honestus Boone married Harriet Rebecca Fullinwieder by whom he had one daughter, Harriet Rebecca (born December 17, 1861; died April 26, 1894), who married (December 29, 1886) Stephen W. Wilson. They (the Wilsons) made their home at Rockdale, Texas. There were two children, both of whom are now living, namely: Jason Boone Wilson, and Susan Nelson Wilson. As given above, Hannibal Honestus

Charles Peter Gordon, brother to Sue H. Gordon, came to Texas and lived for a time in Grimes county, then moved to Chambers county, where he died about 1888. He married Lizzie Andrus, of Louisiana, by whom he had two sons, namely: John A. Gordon, now of Houston, Texas; and Charles Peter Gordon, Jr., who, when last heard of by Mr. H. H. Boone, was in Denver, Colorado.²⁹⁵ W. W. Gordon, son of Lidia E. (Moore) and Charles Peter Gordon, came

Boone's second wife was Susan H. Gordon, grand-daughter of John Moore. Of the ten children, named above, Hannibal H. Boone (born August 17, 1866; died December 12, 1929) married (November 30, 1890) Emma Brown (born August 15, 1872), daughter of Geo. H. Brown, and had four children, all of whom are now living, namely: David Boone, who married Mamie Williams and now resides at Amarillo, Texas; Dorothy; Mary; and Sarah, all three of whom are single and reside at Navasota, Texas, with their mother. The writer is deeply indebted to the late Mr. Hannibal H. Boone for assistance in securing the data here given, especially that which applies to his grandfather, John Moore. Mary Boone (born October 16, 1868) married the late Anderson Crisp (married June 16, 1900) of Uvalde, Texas, where she now resides with her three children, Anderson Boone, Michael, and Evelyn. Susie Boone (born August 18, 1870) is now Mrs. A. H. Wilson of Navasota, Texas. She has four children, all of whom are living, namely: Margaret, now Mrs. J. B. Allison of Manor, Texas; Arthur Boone Wilson, who married (May 5, 1927) Lillie Dean, (daughter of Mr. and Mrs. S. W. Dean of Navasota, Texas), and now resides at Huntsville, Texas; Hannibal H. Wilson, and his brother, Lawrence, both reside with their parents at Navasota, Texas. The writer was given much assistance in this work by Mrs. A. H. Wilson and her son Hannibal. Evelyn Boone (born July 2, 1872) is now teaching in the public schools of El Paso, Texas. Gordon Boone (born May 9, 1875) married (August 4, 1897) Emma Shrewsbury, of Sherman, Texas, where the family now resides. Gordon has two daughters, namely: Katherine, and Elizabeth, both of whom are single. Latham Boone (born August 20, 1877) married (January 1, 1905) Virginia Scott, daughter of J. L. Scott of Navasota, Texas. Latham and his wife, with their three sons, Walter G., Latham, and Berrell, now reside at Navasota, Texas. Hood Boone (born December 18, 1879) married (July 30, 1902) Myra Kennard, daughter of W. W. Kennard. The family now resides at Edinburg, Texas. There is one daughter, Helen. Louise Boone (born August 11, 1882) is now Mrs. Henry Gudger of Orange, Texas. She married November 23, 1904, and is the mother of three children, namely: Henry D. Grudger, who married (March 12, 1928) Mary Nan Foreman, and resides at Orange, Texas; Gordon and Jack H. Grudger both of whom are single and reside at Orange, Texas.

²⁹⁵ H. H. Boone to E. L. Blair, dated at Navasota, Texas, August 16, 1928.

to Texas, but returned soon afterward to Louisiana to marry. He seems to have remained there. The writer has no information regarding his family.²⁹⁶

Jesse B. McNealy.—The Land Office records show that Jesse B. McNealy and his wife, Elizabeth, applied to Austin for land in his colony under date of December, 1829. Jesse B. McNealy was then twenty-seven years old, and Elizabeth, his wife, was eighteen. They had one child, a daughter. The application shows that they came to Texas from Louisiana. Their one-league grant is located in what is now the southwestern portion of Grimes county, a few miles to the east of the town of Navasota. His patent date is April 11, 1831.²⁹⁷

James W. Pankey.—The writer has no information regarding James W. Pankey other than that is given in his application for land. The application is dated, December, 1827, and shows that he was then forty-six years old and unmarried. He came to Texas from Louisiana and was a farmer by occupation. He received, however a whole league of land, which was not the rule for single men. This league is located in what is now the northern part of Grimes county, and was patented, October 19, 1835.²⁹⁸ There is a community in this vicinity known as Pankey. The writer assumes that the name is in honor of this colonist.

John Payne.—Even more scant is the information at hand concerning John Payne. The Land Office records give no information other than to show that there was a one-league grant patented to John Payne under date of October 16, 1835.

²⁹⁶*H. H. Boone to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, August 16, 1928.

²⁹⁷*Land Applications* 57, in General Land Office, Austin, Texas, *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

²⁹⁸*Ibid.*

This league is located in what is now the extreme northwest portion of Grimes county (see Appendix II).²⁹⁹

John Peterson.—When the Hollands (Francis and William) came to Texas, from Louisiana, in 1822, a sister, Mrs. Mary Peterson, with her two sons, came with them.³⁰⁰ The writer believes that John Peterson was one of these sons. The land application of John Peterson gives his age at twenty-three years; shows him to have been (February of 1829) single; and that he came to Texas from Louisiana. His grant was for one league, patented on April 2, 1831, and situated immediately to the south of the Francis Holland league.³⁰¹ Mrs. Frank Crutchfield, of Navasota, Texas, was formerly a Peterson, and descended from this John Peterson. She thinks one of her sons, who now resides in Dallas, Texas, could give some information about the family, but the writer has not succeeded in getting anything definite in hand.³⁰²

Obediah Pitts.—Obediah Pitts was born in Scotland, being the son of Levi Pitts. He came to America while still a youth, married Polly (Molly) Grappin in Alabama, and some years thereafter applied to Austin for land in Texas. The date of his land application is not known. His land patent was dated October 29, 1835. The application shows Obediah Pitts to have been thirty-seven years old, and his wife, Polly, to have been twenty-eight. At that time they had three daughters. They brought with them four negro slaves, and

²⁹⁹*Land Application*, in General Land Office, Austin, Texas; also *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³⁰⁰*Zuber to Buffington*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

³⁰¹*Land Applications*, in General Land Office, Austin, Texas. *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³⁰²*Mrs. Frank Crutchfield to Mrs. E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, August 23, 1928.

came to Texas from the state of Arkansas.³⁰³ The descendants of Obediah Pitts think that he was in the Texas army during the revolution against Mexico, but the writer, has found nothing to verify this. There seems, also, to be some confusion concerning the children of Obediah and Polly. As stated above, the application for land gives only three daughters; it is known, however, that there was at least one son, John Griffith Pitts (born April 18, 1817; died July 21, 1897). This son married Elizabeth Williams (born December 5, 1820; died August 26, 1886) who resided near the present town of Brenham, in Washington county, Texas. John G. Pitts resided at the old Pitts homestead, near the present little town of Courtney, in Grimes county, where they reared a family of six children, namely: Ike (born May 4, 1849; died March 9, 1874), John Griffith, Levi, Nancy (born July 23, 1847; died June 19, 1881), Mary Elizabeth (born January 31, 1855; died March 25, 1886), and Laura.³⁰⁴

³⁰³*Land Applications*, 91. Of record in the General Land Office at Austin, Texas. *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. Also, *Miss Francis Leake to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, June 28, 1929.

³⁰⁴*Miss Francis Leake to E. H. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, June 28, 1929. Miss Leake secured her information from the Family Bible and from the older members of the Pitts family. According to her information, Ike Pitts married (about 1873) Fannie Broadnax, but died soon after the marriage, leaving no children. John Griffith Pitts, Jr., married and subsequently moved to Hill county, Texas, where he reared a family of five children, namely: Roberta, Johnie, Jesse, Levi, and Cleveland. Roberta is now Mrs. John Marler of Aquilla, Texas. Johnie is married and lives with her husband in Waco, Texas. Jesse is married and lives in Corsicana, Texas. Levi also lives at Corsicana, and Cleveland died in youth. Levi, son of John Griffith and Elizabeth, now resides at Rockport, Texas. He is unmarried. Nancy Pitts married Hamp Thomas, moved to Millican, Texas, and reared a family of four children, namely: Elizabeth, Hamp, Mamie, and Nannie. Elizabeth was the late Mrs. Jeff Leake of Temple, Texas. She died about twenty-eight years ago, being survived by two children, namely: Edna, now Mrs. W. A. Stubblefield, of Houston, Texas; and Ethel Anne, a prominent school teacher, who is now with her sister in Houston, Texas. Hamp Thomas was a soldier by profession. He served in the American army in the Philippine Islands for a time, and

Robert Ray.—There is a quarter-league grant of land situated in what is now the western portion of Grimes county, that was patented to Robert Ray under date of April 9, 1831. The application is dated January, 1824, and shows Robert Ray to have been married. His wife's name was Margaret, and her age is given as fourteen years. Robert Ray gave his own age as twenty-nine years. They came to Texas from the state of New York.³⁰⁵ It seems that Margaret, wife of Robert Ray, did not live long after their arrival in Texas, for Robert Ray is known to have married later to Betsey Greenwood, daughter of Henry Bailey Greenwood, and sister to Franklin Jarvis Greenwood. The writer has no information about any children.¹⁰⁶

when the World War began, joined the Canadian army as a volunteer. While serving in France he was killed in action. Hamp Thomas joined the Canadian army under the name of "J. Baker". He belonged to the Third Canadian Tunnelling Company, and his regimental number was 441729. He was ranked as Sapper. The date of his death was October 3, 1917, and the records show that he died of wounds in the head. (*Extract from Burial Records, Canadian Record Office, London.*) Mamie Thomas, daughter of Nancy and Hamp Thomas, was the late Mrs. W. W. Duncan of Bartlett, Texas. She left no children. Nannie Thomas is now Mrs. A. J. Simon of San Antonio, Texas. She has three children by a former marriage (to W. R. Beaumier), namely: Margaret, Mary, and Hampton. Margaret is now Mrs. Earl Blair of Houston. Mary is now Mrs. Marton of Houston, and Hampton resides in San Antonio. Mary Elizabeth Pitts, daughter of John Griffith Pitts, married J. W. Leake (born March 18, 1852), son of J. F. Leake (born in South Carolina, 1828; died in 1904) and Laura Leake (born in South Carolina, 1832; died 1893). They had four children, namely: Francis A. Leake, Fletcher Leake, Gordon Leake, and Willis Leake. Francis A., Gordon, and Willis Leake are all single and reside in Navasota, Texas. Fletcher Leake lives at Amarillo, Texas, and has a wife and five children, namely: John Gordon, Fletcher, Francis, Mary, and Robert. Laura Pitts married, in 1876, A. Key, and they lived at Wilmington, California. They have one daughter, Edna Earl, who is Now Mrs. E. H. Cooke of Los Angeles, California. (*L. G. Andrews to E. L. Blair, July 12, 1929.*)

³⁰⁵*Land Applications*, 55, in the General Land Office at Austin, Texas. *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³⁰⁶Greenwood, Robert E., Junior, *History of Greenwoods* (MS). At the time of her marriage to Ray, Betsey was a widow, having been married to a man by the name of Henson.

Andrew Rea.—The land applications show no information about Andrew Rea other than that he was fifty years old and single. His application is not dated. His one-quarter league grant, patented on June 18, 1831, lies a few miles east of the present little town of Shiro, Grimes county.³⁰⁷ There are several Reas living in this vicinity, and the writer believes that they are descendants of Andrew Rea, but no conclusive data has been obtained.³⁰⁸

Ignacius Simms.—No record was found of a land application by Ignacius Simms, but a one-league grant, lying in the extreme northern part of Grimes county and partly in Madison county, was patented to him under date of October 26, 1835.³⁰⁹ It seems that Ignacius Simms came to Texas sometime prior to 1835, secured his land grant, and in 1836, returned to Louisiana, where he remained until about 1852, when he returned to Texas and re-occupied his land. During the period of his stay in Louisiana (1836-1852), his land was held by his brother-in-law, Edward Ariola.³¹⁰ The wife of

³⁰⁷*Land Applications*, 97, in the General Office at Austin, Texas. *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³⁰⁸The writer understands that Frank Rea of Shiro, Texas, is a descendant of Andrew Rea. No answer was received from a communication addressed to Mr. Frank Rea. Such communication was written under date of November 4, 1928.

³⁰⁹*Land Applications*, of record in the General Land Office at Austin, Texas. Also *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³¹⁰*Mrs. Margaret M. Harrison to E. L. Blair*, dated at Bedias, Texas, July 7, 1928. *Mrs. W. C. Blagg to E. L. Blair*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 21, 1928. Mrs. Blagg is a grand-daughter of Edward Ariola. According to the above, Edward Ariola came to Texas from Louisiana along with Ignacius Simms, and occupied the Simms league of land until about 1852. The Ariolas were of Spanish blood, but fought with the Americans against the Mexicans and Indians. Edward Ariola had seven children, namely: Masamore, Delores, Joe, John, Gray, Eli, and Mary. (Mrs. Blagg thinks there was another son by the name of Frank, but Mrs. M. Harrison is positive such was not true.) Masamore Ariola married Polly Rivers, daughter of Antonio Rivers, another pioneer of Spanish blood who was residing in this vicinity. They had three children, namely: Ed, Leovenia, and Margaret. Masamore Ariola's second wife was Felician Short, daughter of Ulysses Short, by whom he had three

Ignacius Simms was Nancy Pankey, possibly a daughter to the James W. Pankey who settled on a nearby league at about the same time. They were married, however, prior to their arrival in Texas. Both are buried in the old Bethel Cemetery on what is known as Simms Prairie, a few miles from the town of Bedias. Their children were Richard (born July 8, 1824; died April of 1883), Nancy, Mary Anne, Mary Jane, Adeline, William and John.³¹¹

more children, Matilda, Francis, and Sallie. Concerning these children of Masamore Ariola, Leovenia married John Treadwell; Margaret died in childhood; Matilda is now Mrs. W. C. Blagg of Iola community in Grimes county; Francis married Will Upchurch, from whom she later separated. She had three children, namely: Eula Upchurch, now Mrs. Will Nobles of Bedias, Texas; Mike Upchurch, now of Madison county; and Esmer Upchurch, now of Bedias, Texas. Delores Ariola settled later in Old Mexico, where she married and had two children. John Ariola, son of Edward, is said to have fought in the Battle of San Jacinto with T. P. Plaster, and to have influenced Plaster to settle in Grimes county after the establishment of Texas independence. (This given by Mrs. Margaret Harrison, daughter of T. P. Plaster. *The Index of Texas Revolutionary Soldiers*, shows Plaster to have been at the Battle of San Jacinto, but no mention is made of John Ariola). McDonald, however, in his *Soldiers of San Jacinto* (MS), 37, gives the name of Simon Ariola, as belonging to the Ninth Company, Second Regiment of Texas Volunteers. According to Mrs. M. Harrison, John Ariola also fought in the Mexican War under Ben McCullough, as did also his two brothers, Gray and Eli. She says that Eli also fought in the Southern army during the Civil War, and that he lost an arm at Pea Ridge, Arkansas. After the close of the Civil War, Eli Ariola married. The writer does not know the name of his wife, but she is said to have married William Jones, after the death of Eli Ariola. Mary Ariola, daughter of Edward, married William Stone and lived in Grimes county until her death. She had two children, Edward and Mary.

³¹¹J. T. Simms to E. L. Blair, dated at Bedias, Texas, July 6, 1928. According to Mr. J. T. Simms, Richard Simms, son of Ignacius, married Maris Callender, daughter of J. J. Callender who resided on Simms Prairie. They (Richard and Maris) had six children, namely: Mary Anne, Nancy, William R., Elvina Mae, Lula, and Jerry T. Mary Anne, Simms married V. A. Upchurch, moved to Falls county about 1908, where they reared a family. Mrs. Maggie Roberts of Chilton, Texas, is a daughter of Mary Anne and V. A. Upchurch. Nancy Simms married Ennis Upchurch, moved to Falls county about 1901, and is survived by several children. William R. Simms, son of Richard Simms, married Mollie Hall, daughter of W. L. Hall; moved to Madison county about 1925. Mrs. Frank Midkiff, of Bedias, Grimes county, is a daughter, and so is Mrs. Lena Price of Bedias. Both have families. Elvina Mae Simms is now Mrs.

William Townsend.—William Townsend applied for land in April of 1835, and his grant was patented on October 20 of the same year. He was another one of the group of pioneers who settled in the extreme northern part of what is now

E. L. Hall. She is a widow and resides in the Cotton community, Grimes county. Her children are W. R. Hall, M. M. Hall, Gary Hall, all three of whom reside at Bedias, Texas. There are two daughters, namely: Mrs. Eula Mae Tadlock, of Cotton community, Grimes county; and Mrs. Lona Barnett, of Edna, Texas. Eula Simms, daughter of Richard, is now Mrs. Job Landers, of Bedias, and is the mother of eight children, namely: Simms, Jose, Charlie, Odell, Richard, Jerry, Jesse, and Beulah. Simms Landers married a Miss Newton, and resides at Bedias. Jose Landers married Eva Journigen, and also lives at Bedias. Charlie, Odell, Richard, and Jerry Simms are all married. Jesse Simms is now Mrs. Tom Price of Bedias; Beulah, her sister, is now Mrs. E. H. Carmack, also of Bedias. Jerry T. Simms, son of Richard, and grandson of Ignacius, has been very kind in giving the writer all assistance possible in the preparation of this sketch. Mr. Jerry T. Simms is now a banker at Bedias, Texas. He married Callie Hensley, daughter of William Hensley, and is the father of three children, namely: Ethel, Goree, and Lee. Ethel is now Mrs. George Barron, of Pearsall, Texas. Goree married Bessie Harrison, now resides at Anderson, and is County Clerk of Grimes county. Lee is single and resides at Bedias. Nancy Simms, daughter of Ignacius, married William Plaster, son of Tom Plaster, and brother to the Mrs. Margaret Harrison, mentioned several times above. William Plaster and his wife moved to Taylor county. They have no living descendants. Mary Anne Simms, daughter of Ignacius, married J. J. Callender, continued to reside in Grimes county and reared a large family of children, some of whom are, as follows: M. Ollie Callender, now of Bedias; Unity A. Callender, also of Bedias; John I. Callender, who married Camillo Pyles, resides at Bedias; Richard Callender, who married Lou Williamson, both now dead; and Mattie Callender, who is now Mrs. Henry T. Williamson, of Bedias. Richard Callender and Lou Williamson are survived by several children, two of whom are Bill Williamson Callender, now a dentist at Port Arthur, Texas; and Mrs. Sam Miller, now of Navasota, Texas. Mary Jane Simms, daughter of Ignacius, married William Wells. Both are buried at the Bethel Cemetery, near Bedias. They had two children, namely: Henry Wells, deceased, who married a Miss Shanks, daughter of Flournoy Shanks. She now resides in Madison county; Seth Wells, the other son, is married and resides near Wharton, Texas. Adeline Simms, daughter of Ignacius married George Jones, and moved from Grimes county. The writer has no information regarding William Simms, son of Ignacius, his brother, John Simms, however, is survived by several children. He (John) married three times. There was a daughter, Elizabeth, by the first wife, but she died in youth. The second wife of John Simms was a Miss Campbell, by whom he had two children, namely: Tom and Allie. Tom married Catherine Stone, daughter of Ed Stone. She is dead and Tom

Grimes county. The league lies partly in Madison county. His application shows that he came from Alabama; that he was a farmer by occupation. The application also shows that William Townsend had a large family in Matagorda, Texas.³¹² The name of William Townsend appears on the rolls of the Texas Veteran Association as having furnished documentary evidence of military or political service to Texas between 1820 and 1836.³¹³ The writer is led to believe that the family of William Townsend never permanently settled on the league in Grimes county, but remained in Matagorda county.

Daniel Tyler.—No information has been found concerning Daniel Tyler whose one-quarter league grant, patented October 22, 1835, lies a few miles to the south of the present town of Navasota. The application in the General Land Office gives no information.³¹⁴

lives near Conroe, Texas, with several children. Allie married Ira West of Montgomery county. Both are now dead and the writer has no information regarding their children. The third wife of John Simms was Mattie Yarborough, by whom he had two children, namely: J. H., and Robert. J. H. Simms married a daughter of F. E. Strand, and now resides at Bédias, Texas. Robert Simms married; his wife is dead, however, and he now lives at Bédias, Texas. They had two children, Harmon, and Mattie. Harmon is at Bédias, and Mattie is now Mrs. Youngblood of Hempstead, Texas.

The writer finds no mention of Ignacius Simms in the *Austin Papers*. A Bartlett Simms seems to have played a rather prominent part in opposing the Edward (Fredonian) Rebellion, but there is nothing to show that he was related to Ignacius Simms. (Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1333, 1550, 1568.)

³¹²*Land Application*, 91. Of record in the General Land Office, Austin, Texas. *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³¹³*Proceedings of the Association of Texas Veterans for 1873*. Half a league was sold to Horatio Chriesman, October 15, 1836. *Grimes County Deed Record*, C, 178.

³¹⁴*Land Applications*, of record in the General Land Office, Austin, Texas. *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. Daniel Tyler sold some of his land to David Underwood on January 27, 1852. *Deed Records of Grimes County*, B, 617-619. On the same date he sold another part (the northeast one-eighth league) to E. G. Hearn. *Ibid.*

Allen Vince.—A one-half league grant, situated in the eastern part of what is now Grimes county and lying partly in Montgomery county, was patented to Allen Vince on April 30, 1831. The writer finds no record of an application from Allen Vince in the General Land Office at Austin, Texas, and has found no descendants of this colonist.³¹⁵

Tandy Walker.—The land application of Tandy Walker is dated in 1830, and shows him to have been sixty-two years old, and his wife, Mary, to have been fifty-five years old. The application shows that they had with them two sons; that they owned six negro slaves; and that they came to Texas from Palo Gacho (spelled "Palagache" in application). Palo Gacho creek is located a few miles east of Nacogdoches, Texas. It seems therefore that the Walkers had settled at first in this locality and later applied for land in Austin's colony.³¹⁶ It is known that the Walkers came to Texas from Alabama, and that they arrived in Texas March 11, 1828.³¹⁷ The writer has some rather interesting data concerning the Walker family, but it is of such a fragmentary nature that it has been impossible to trace clearly the family connections.

³¹⁵*Land Application*, and *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. His land was sold to Seabeam J. Hendrick, February 28, 1844. *Deed Records of Grimes County*, A-2, 421.

³¹⁶*Land Application*, 97. *L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, dated at Brady, Texas, July 19, 1928. Ballou is a grandson of Robert Armour, whose daughter, Delilah, was Tandy Walker's second wife. *Stephen F. Austin's Map of Texas*, 1829, in Archives of State Library.

³¹⁷*J. T. Robison to Mrs. Etta Weaver*, dated at Austin, Texas, March 11, 1929. In this letter, J. T. Robison, Texas Land Commissioner, cites Headright Certificate No. 168, issued by the Board of Land Commissioners of Montgomery county, February 1, 1836, to Tandy Walker for one league and one labor, which certificate recites that Tandy H. Walker arrived in this country, March 11, 1828, and that he was a married man. This Tandy H. Walker may have been the son of the Tandy Walker to whom a Grimes county league was patented under date of April 27, 1831. The writer bases the statement that Walker came to Texas from Alabama on *West's History of Methodism in Alabama*. 90-91.

The Walkers were pioneer woodsmen and followed the American frontier as it advanced westward. Tandy Walker was born in the state of Virginia.³¹⁸ He is thought to have resided for a time in the state of Kentucky, thence moving

³¹⁸The following quotation is taken from *West's History of Methodism in Alabama*, 90-91. It was furnished Mrs. Etta Weaver, of Navasota, Texas, by Marie B. Owen, Director of the Department of Archives and History, State of Alabama, in a letter dated, March 19, 1928.

"Among all the men whom Mr. Sturdevant found in that country there was none of more conspicuous character than Tandy Walker, none in whom Mr. Sturdevant was more intensely interested. Mr. Walker's grandmother's maiden name was Nancy Tandy. That was the origin of his name, Tandy. He was by birth a Virginian, by nature and experience a backwoodsman, by trade a blacksmith, and by acquired knowledge of the Indian language a medium of communication between the English-speaking and the Indian-speaking people. For all these reasons Mr. Sturdevant would be interested in him. He emigrated to Tombigbee by or before the summer of 1803. Some have said that he went to Tombigbee in 1801. He was noted for courage, generosity and honesty. The United States Government was exceedingly anxious to civilize the Indians and improve their condition, and to this end endeavored to introduce among them implements of husbandry. In some of the treaties made with the Indian Tribes the Federal Government stipulated to furnish them blacksmiths. In connection with the trading house established at Saint Stephens for the benefit of the Choctaw Indians the government established a blacksmith shop, and for a time employed Tandy Walker to do the work of the shop. . . . Therefore, to Mr. Sturdevant, Tandy Walker, the blacksmith, was an important and invaluable citizen in the country where he found him. Tandy Walker was, no doubt, the man who, from time to time, shod the horse of the first Methodist preacher who went to and fro in that environed settlement. It has been stated above that this blacksmith was a conspicuous character. He was summoned to serve on the juries of his country, and was employed and sent on most delicate and complicated missions. He was sent on expeditions in which caution, daring, endurance, insight, and wisdom were all in requisition. In 1812, upon the suggestion of Mrs. Gaines, the wife of George S. Gaines, the Government Agent, and upon the promptings of his own noble and generous impulses, Tandy Walker went to the Falls of the Black Warrior River, about where Tuscaloosa now stands, to rescue or ransom a Mrs. Crawley who had been captured in Tennessee and brought to that place by a party of Creek warriors who had been on a visit to Tecumseh on the Lakes. This business Mr. Walker transacted with success. In 1813 he went on some perilous expeditions for inspecting the situation and ascertaining the movements of the Creek forces which beleaguered the white settlement.

"Though Tandy Walker could never be induced to join the Church himself, members of his household were in the communion of the Methodist Episcopal Church. His wife, whose maiden name was Mary Mays, was one of the Methodists of the Tombigbee Circuit, and his daughter, Sarah Newstep, who was born at the old town of Saint Stephens, on the Tombigbee River, November 8, 1803, and who in 1820 married Caswell Reynolds, and who lived many years near New Berne, Alabama, and who died this year 1890, was baptized and received into the Methodist Episcopal church in the year 1815, at one of the appointments on the Tombigbee Circuit, near Coffeetown, Clarke County, Alabama, by Rev. Samuel Sellers, then Presiding elder. This woman was a member of the Methodist Church in Alabama, for three-quarters of a century. She was full of faith and good works.

"Southeast of the present town of New Berns and in Township eighteen and Range six is a noted prairie marked on the maps as Walker's Prairie, and said to have been called for Tandy Walker, and not far from that Prairie, on the west side of it, Tandy Walker died in about 1842. His grave is there until this day."

into Alabama. There is some reason to think that he, certainly some of his sons, resided in Tennessee about 1826.³¹⁹ Tandy Walker, while residing in Alabama, is said to have served in the United States Army under General Andrew Jackson, during the War of 1812, and is said to have been several times wounded while in such service.³²⁰ His most

³¹⁹*John C. Walker to Austin*, dated at Land Office Henderson county, State of Tennessee, dated March 15, 1826, published by Barker in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1274. Walker writes as follows:

"From an acquaintance I had with your father's family particularly Jas. Austin who lived with me in my father's family in the state of Kentucky while he was at school I take the liberty of addressing you a letter which I hope will be speedily answered there is about to be made up a company to emigrate to the province of Texas I wish to make one of it but least I might not be satisfied with that Country, I wish you as I know you from Character to write me a letter concerning that Country as to the soil health, waters etc and the particular terms upon which settlers go there upon, how much land a man of family would be entitled to, and also a sketch of Your Laws, and some of the most important clauses in your constitution, which might concern as american as well as your religious restrictions etc the distance from New Orleans, by water the distance from the Chickasaw Bluffs by land as near as you can guess—accompanied with your advise Of the importance of driving cattle hoggs etc. etc. whether your soil and climate is adapted to the culture of cotton, and whether groceries can be conveniently, and low, whether your lands or heavily Timbered or barrony, the Rivers you would advise me on, etc. etc. etc. If Jas. Austin is with you or in reach of you I should be verry glad, he could hear from me, and tell him to write me, etc."

³²⁰*Rufus Grimes to John G. Walker*. This letter is undated, but seems to be in the handwriting of Rufus Grimes. The original is in the possession of Mrs. Etta Weaver, Navasota, Texas. It indicates that John G. Walker was making an attempt to secure a bounty from the United States Government because of his grandfather's services during the War of 1812. Rufus Grimes offers to take an oath to the following:

"That he was when a boy acquainted with Tandy Walker who came to Texas in the year 1828 and to whom was granted a league of land in what is now Grimes county said league having been granted on the 24th day of Dec. 1844, Abstract No. 37, that said Tandy Walker had a wife whose given name he does not now remember, that Tandy Walker and his wife both died many years since that they left three sons living towit: Tandy H. Walker, John Walker, and Daniel Walker that John and Daniel Walker have now no living heirs they both having been a long while dead that Tandy H. Walker has also been long dead but left several children towit: Mrs. Emma Taylor now of Sutton county this state, Mrs. A. C. Carter of Grimes county, Elizabeth Jones and John G. Walker also of Grimes county—That the Tandy Walker who came to Texas in 1828, came from the state of Alabama to Texas and was reported to have been many times wounded while in military service under Andrew Jackson during the years from 1812 to 1815. . . ."

In this same letter Rufus Grimes states that if Tandy Walker ever had any daughters that he (Grimes) did not know them.

valuable service, however, seems to have been as mediator between the whites and the Indians. A blacksmith by trade, he was for a time in charge of a government blacksmith shop at Saint Stephens, then an army post in Alabama. He was the hero of one of the most thrilling Indian incidents in Alabama, the rescue of Mrs. Crawley, a Tennessee white woman, kidnapped in Tennessee by "Little Warrior," a Creek, who brought her to the "Great Falls," near where Tuscaloosa now stands, where she was to have been burned at the stake.³²¹ Arriving in Texas in 1823, Walker established his headright league along what is now Grassy creek in the western edge of what was known as the Grimes Prairie community. Several of his children remained in Alabama, where, it seems, Tandy Walker returned after a few years in Texas, for he is said to have died in Alabama in the year 1842, and to have been buried on Walker's Prairie, near the present town of New Berne, Alabama.³²² Tandy Walker was married first to Mary Mays, This is evidently the Mary given in his application for land, who was fifty-five years old in 1830. At this point the writer is confused. It has not been absolutely shown that the Tandy Walker who is reported to have died in Alabama in 1842 was the Tandy Walker who came to Texas in 1828. Names of the children given for Tandy Walker and Mary Mays by West and Owen do not exactly correspond to names of children given for Tandy Walker and his wife, Mary, who came to Texas in 1828.³²³ Then, again, Tandy Walker is

³²¹Owen's *History and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, IV. Furnished Mrs. Etta Weaver of Navasota, Texas, by Marie B. Owen, Director of the Department of Archives and History, Montgomery, Alabama, under date of March 19, 1929.

³²²*Ibid.* Also West, *History of Methodism in Alabama*, 90-91.

³²³West's *History of Methodism in Alabama*, and Owen's *History and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, IV. Children given by above writers for Tandy and Mary are, namely: Sarah, and Millie, while L. Ballou of Brady, Texas, gives Mary Jane and Millie.

reported by West and Owen to have died in Alabama in 1842. There is, however, a deed record in Grimes county that shows Tandy Walker to have deeded property to John C. and Tandy Walker under date of June 1, 1844.³²⁴ The writer draws the conclusion that Tandy Walker came to Texas in 1828 with two sons and his wife; that several older children, who were married and had families of their own remained in Alabama, some of whom later came to Texas; and that sometime about 1845, Tandy Walker must have returned to Alabama and died while there.³²⁵ The data in hand indicates that Tandy Walker had four children by his first wife, Mary Mays, namely: Sarah, Mary Jane, Millie, Tandy H., and Daniel.³²⁶ After the death of his first wife, Tandy Walker married Delilah Armour, daughter of Robert Armour, by whom he had three children, namely: Amanda, Elizabeth, and John C.³²⁷ Sarah Walker (born November 8, 1803, at Saint Stephens, Alabama; died 1890) married (1820) Caswell Reynolds and resided many years at New Berne, Alabama (see footnote No. 282 above).³²⁸ Mary Jane married Lenin Jones and lived in Montgomery county until her death. She left no children.³²⁹ Millie Walker married Edward Easley in Alabama. She seems to have married a second time in Texas, as there is mention of Millie, daughter

³²⁴*Transcribed Deed Records of Montgomery County, LXXXIII, 578.*

³²⁵The writer is conscious of the fact that the above is not clear, but it seems impossible with the date in hand to trace the connection satisfactorily.

³²⁶Owen's *History and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, IV. mentions two daughters, Sarah and Millie. *Rufus Grimes to John Grimes Walker*, cited in footnote number 320 above, named three sons, Tandy H., John, and Daniel. *L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1928, mentions Mary Jane. There may have been other children. There are several other Walkers mentioned in the Grimes county records, for example, there is an Alexander Walker to whom Tandy and his wife deeded land, March 6, 1840. *Transcribed Deed Records of Montgomery County, LXXXIII, 578.*

³²⁷*L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1928.

³²⁸West, *History of Methodism in Alabama*, 90-91.

³²⁹*L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, August 19, 1928.

of Tandy Walker, marrying a W. Taylor, by whom she had one daughter whose name the writer does not have. Millie and her husband, W. Taylor, resided in Montgomery county, Texas.³³⁰ Tandy H. Walker, son of Tandy Walker, married in the year 1828, or 1829, to a woman named Prudence Choat, by whom he had one daughter, Emma.³³¹ Tandy H. Walker married again in 1837, having three more children by this second wife, namely: a daughter whose name the writer does not have, who married W. C. Carter and resided in Grimes county; Elizabeth; and John Grimes.³³² Daniel Walker,

³³⁰Owen, *History and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, IV. *L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1928.

³³¹*L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1928. This Emma Walker, daughter of Tandy H. and Prudence Walker, married a man by the name of Taylor and, according to Rufus Grimes, moved to Sutton county, Texas. (*Rufus Grimes to John Grimes Walker*, this is the undated letter described in footnote number 320, above.)

³³²*Rufus Grimes to John Grimes Walker*. *L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1928. Elizabeth Walker married a man named Jones. The writer has no information regarding her family. John Grimes Walker (born April 19, 1846; died February 16, 1928) married Eliza Bullock (born July 23, 1851; died June 2, 1917). They reared a large family of eleven children, namely: Rufus A. (born August 12, 1870); Willie H. (born February 28, 1879), King Oran (born October 12, 1875), Mary Elizabeth (born May 2, 1878), Dolphia Dolena (born June 12, 1880; died March 23, 1902), John Grimes, Junior (born April 5, 1889), Rosa Lee (born March 10, 1886), Ida Pearl (born October 9, 1888), Polly Ann (born February 4, 1891), Etta Jennett (born February 12, 1894), and Carrie Myrtle (born March 4, 1896). As indicated above, nine of these children are now living. Rufus A. Walker married, October 9, 1891, Fannie Dehart, by whom he had one daughter, Ellen. Rufus A. Walker married a second time, and now resides at Waco. There are two children by the second marriage, namely: Annie and Willie. Willie H. Walker, son of John Grimes Walker, married, December 26, 1894, Carrie Andrews, by whom he had one son, Otis Theodore Walker, born December 26, who now resides in Houston, Texas. Willie H. Walker's second wife was, before her marriage, a Miss Laura Taylor. Both Willie H. and his wife, Laura, now reside at Franklin, Texas. King Oran Walker married Pearl Matthews, and they now live at Courtney, Texas. They have five children, namely: Lena, Walter, Edna, Lavern, and "Jack." Mary E. Walker is now Mrs. W. M. Peden of Navasota, Texas. Her husband, W. M. Peden, died in 1921, being survived by his wife and three children, namely: James Alexander Peden, Christie Peden, and Mary Elizabeth Peden. James Alexander married Miss Bengie Mullican (about 1926) and they now reside at Navasota, Texas.

brother to Tandy H. Walker, married about February of 1835. His wife died soon after their marriage, and Daniel himself died in 1837.³³³ Amanda Walker, daughter of Tandy Walker, married Hamp Carter. They were married in the summer of 1858, at the old Walker homestead, on Grimes Prairie. Amanda and Hamp Carter are both now dead. They resided in what is known as Martin's Prairie community, near the present little town of Roan's Prairie, and are survived by several children, some of whom are Amanda, Ella, Quince, and Mattie. The writer knows of one other daughter by the name of Julia who is now dead.³³⁴ Elizabeth Walker, daughter of Tandy Walker, married a man by the name of Clarence Jones.³³⁵ John C. Walker, son of Tandy Walker, seems to have died while young.³³⁶

John Grimes Walker, Junior, married Annie Mansel of Houston, Texas, where they now reside. They have one daughter, named Lola. Rosa Lee Walker is now Mrs. William Davis Allen of Houston, Texas. She had three daughters, namely: Gladys, Annie, and Willie. Only one, Gladys, is married. She is now Mrs. Ray Thompson of Houston, Texas. Ida Pearl Walker is now Mrs. Willie Brown of Houston. They have two children, namely: Rosa Maud and Billie. Polly Ann Walker is now Mrs. W. E. Hawkins of Houston, Texas. She has one daughter whose name is Ruth. Etta Jennett Walker is now Mrs. W. S. Weaver of Navasota, Texas. Her husband, W. S. Weaver, was born October 20, 1889, and was killed in a railroad accident, October 5, 1928. Mrs. W. S. Weaver has three children, namely: Leroy Shelton (born September 1, 1911), William Clifton (born July 22, 1919), and Etta Lattreعه (born July 26, 1921). The writer is indebted to Mrs. W. S. Weaver for the greater part of the information given in this sketch. Carrie Myrtle Walker is now Mrs. C. F. Weaver of Navasota, Texas, and is the mother of seven children, namely: Emory Louise, Carrol, Florrie, Kittie Mae, Thomas Z., Elizabeth, and Helen. (*Mrs. W. S. Weaver to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, June 29, 1929.)

³³³*Rufus Grimes to John Grimes Walker.*

³³⁴*L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1928, and *Mrs. Etta Jennette Weaver to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, June 29, 1929. Amanda Carter is now Mrs. Clay Jones; Ella Carter is now Mrs. Williams; and Mattie Carter is now Mrs. Tye Thomas; all of whom reside in the northern part of Grimes county.

³³⁵*L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1928. Ballou thinks there were no children.

³³⁶*Rufus Grimes to John Grimes Walker; L. Ballou to E. L. Blair*, July 19, 1928. Grimes states that John Walker had been dead a long time and that he

Caleb Wallace.—No application for land by Caleb Wallace is found in the General Land Office, at Austin, Texas. There is a one-league grant, situated in what is now the southern part of Grimes county, that was patented to Caleb Wallace, May 14, 1828.³³⁷ The writer has found no one in Grimes county who knows anything about Caleb Wallace. Mr. Joe Ashford, of Hempstead, Texas, says that he remembers the family, and that they moved away from Grimes county when he was a small boy.³³⁸ It is supposed that the Wallace family came from Virginia.³³⁹ The house of Caleb Wallace was a desig-

left no heirs. Ballou, however, seemed to be of the opinion that John Walker married and left heirs. The writer is somewhat confused about this John C. Walker. Ballou gives him as having been the son of Tandy and his second wife, Delilah Armour. There is a record, however, of a John C. Walker, who had a family in Tennessee in 1826, and who wrote to Austin, asking about conditions in Texas (see footnote number 319, page 149, of this chapter). If this John C. Walker was the son of Tandy Walker, he was evidently one of the older children by the first wife, Mary Mays. It may be, on the other hand, that the John C. Walker, who wrote from Tennessee, was a brother of Tandy Walker, or even no relation at all.

³³⁷*Land Applications and Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³³⁸*Joe Ashford to E. L. Blair*, dated at Hempstead, December 3, 1928. Mr. Joe Ashford is about seventy or more years old and lived most all of his life in the southern part of Grimes county.

³³⁹*Mrs. Maude Wallace McDonald to E. L. Blair*, dated at Austin, Texas, December 23, 1928. Mrs. McDonald resides at 600 West 17th Street, Austin, Texas. The following is quoted from her letter.

"I regret to say that I am unable to give you any data on this particular Caleb Wallace, further than I am quite sure he emigrated from Virginia to Texas and is most likely closely related to the Caleb Wallace who was P. clerk of the Presbyter of Hanover to the General Assembly of Virginia, 1776. 'See Old Churches and Families of Virginia,' by Bishop Meade. Austin was in Virginia about this time and I suspect became acquainted with the Wallace families and induced the Wallaces to come to Texas. I am the granddaughter of Lt. Col. Wm. Simpson Wallace, who came to Texas from Tennessee about 1834 or 1835, and later was deputy Surveyor of Bexar Land District under John James. The Lt. Col. commission was given him by Pres. M. B. Lamar, for killing Gen. Flores in the Battle of 'Brushy Cr.' and securing the 'Cordova-Flores correspondence.' My g-g-father, John Wallace, came from Virginia to Tenn. The original Wallace family of Virginia was a very large one, and they have scattered—some to Ken. Tenn. Fla. S. C., Ala. Colo. and where not."

nated voting place in 1831, and the presiding judge for such was William Pettus.³⁴⁰

James Wallace.—There is an application in the General Land Office for James Wallace, and it shows that he came to Texas from the state of Georgia; that he was by occupation a farmer; that he was fifty-six years old, in December of 1826, the date of his application; and that his wife's name was Patsy, whose age is given as fifty years.³⁴¹ The one-league grant to James Wallace is in the southern part of Grimes county, and joins the Tandy Walker league on the south. The patent date is April 6, 1831.³⁴² No information has been found regarding any descendants.

Dudley J. White.—The land application of Dudley J. White shows that he came to Texas from the state of Georgia; that, by occupation, he was a farmer; that his age was then (February, 1827), twenty-seven years; that his wife was named Bethia, whose age was twenty-four years; and that they had no children.³⁴³ His league was patented May 31, 1831, and is located in what is now the extreme southern part of Grimes county, lying partly in Waller county.³⁴⁴ In July of the year 1852, the writer finds eight heirs given for Dudley J. White, namely: Berthia, James W., Leander, John P., Mariah L., Caleb W., Elendor, and Miriam.³⁴⁵ In addition to these,

³⁴⁰Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXII, 358.

³⁴¹*Land Applications*, 49, in the General Land Office, at Austin, Texas.

³⁴²*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. A James P. Wallace was granted 1608 acres of land, for services as state ranger for a period of twelve months dating from January 17, 1836. (Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, VIII, 395), also, the name of W. A. Wallace appears on the rolls of the Association of Texas Veterans for 1893. (*Proceedings of the Association of Texas Veterans for 1893*, 8-14.)

³⁴³*Land Applications*, 91, of record in the General Land Office at Austin, Texas.

³⁴⁴*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604, see map in the appendix of this volume.

³⁴⁵*Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, II, 361-362.

Mr. Joe Ashford, of Hempstead, Texas, states that he remembers a son of Dudley J. White by the name of Walter, and another by the name of Pinkney. According to Ashford, Walter White died while in the Confederate Army. He says that Walter White left no family.³⁴⁶ Pinkney White (likely the John P. White listed above) was also a Confederate Veteran. After the war, he married and resided in the northern part of what is now Brazos county, near the old town of Wheelock.³⁴⁷ Caleb White served in Hood's Texas Brigade during the Civil War, and was killed at Gaines Mill, leaving no family.³⁴⁸ Mariam (Matilda) White married a Mr. Jackson by whom she had a daughter who was also named Matilda. Mariam (White) Jackson outlived her first husband and later married Levi Bailey, and lived for several years at Bryan, Texas. There were no children from this second marriage. Matilda Jackson, daughter of Mariam by her first husband, married and moved from Grimes county. The writer has no information of her family.³⁴⁹ Elendor White married a Mr. Gregory. They moved to Houston where she died with yellow fever prior to the Civil War, being survived by two sons, namely: Edgar, whose descendants now reside near Brookshire, Texas; and Dudley. Mariah L. White married Joe Lyons and they moved to Alabama.³⁵⁰ The name,

³⁴⁶Joe Ashford to E. L. Blair, December 3, 1928. This Walter is probably the same as the James W. White listed in the *Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, II, 361. James W. White's name occurs on the *List of Names of Militia for Beant No. 4 of Grimes County*, certified to by J. G. Chatham, enrolling officer, under date of October 1, 1861. (See *Muster Roll* in Appendix.)

³⁴⁷Joe Ashford to E. L. Blair, December 3, 1928.

³⁴⁸Polley, *Hood's Texas Brigade*, 325-327. His name does not appear on the original *Muster Roll* but appears on Polley's roll. He therefore evidently joined after the organization of this unit.

³⁴⁹*Grimes County Probate Records*, II, 361-362. Ashford to E. L. Blair, December 3, 1928. Ashford gives her name as Matilda.

³⁵⁰*Probate Minutes of Grimes County*, II, 261-262; Joe Ashford to E. L. Blair, December 3, 1928.

White, seems to have been a common one in Austin's colony. The writer finds many of that name mentioned in the *Austin Papers*.³⁵¹

James Whitesides.—The writer fails to find any record of the land application made by James Whitesides. His grant is dated July 16, 1824, and lies in the southwestern portion of what is now Grimes county.³⁵² James Whitesides (born July 21, 1771; died in Texas, April 24, 1848) came to Texas from the state of Tennessee, prior to April 20, 1824.³⁵³ He played an important role in the affairs of the colony, but seems to have maintained the status of an influential private citizen. The writer finds nothing to show that he was ever in the army of Texas, or that he ever held public office, other than that of election judge in the district of Bravo, 1826.³⁵⁴ The name of James Whitesides occurs frequently in the correspondence of Stephen F. Austin, and indicates that Whitesides

³⁵¹Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II. In this volume, the following Whites are mentioned: Allen (or Alen) White, pages 702, 771, and 773; Amy White, page 1132; Joseph White, page 1523; Walter C. White, page 1291; Will White, page 1681. In *Austin Papers*, as published by Barker in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1922*, II, is found the name of F. White, page 162; Matthew G. White, page 316; and Thomas White, pages 164, and 197.

In the "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," as published by Barker, in the *Quarterly*, XXIII, 307, Dudley J. White is mentioned as having failed to comply with obligations under which he purchased lots, and it was ordered that such lots be sold on June 2, 1831. White had purchased them, February, 1831.

³⁵²*Land Applications*, and *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604. See map in Appendix.

³⁵³*Whitesides Family Bible*, now in possession of Mrs. James B. Whitesides of Hempstead, Texas, whose husband was a grandson of James Whitesides. The date April 20, 1824, is given to a statement signed by both James and Bolen Whitesides, in which they appointed Baron de Bastrop their elector to vote for the colony on the Colorado and Brazos, at the election of a deputy to the Convention of the Eastern Internal State (Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 772.)

³⁵⁴Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 1552.

and Austin were on intimate and friendly terms.³⁵⁵ Concerning the parents of James Whitesides, the writer has nothing. He mentions having had a brother by the name of Jonathan, who was dead (died November 29, 1824), being survived by two sons.³⁵⁶ These sons were Henry and Bolen Whitesides to whom a tract of land, lying across the Navasota river from the James Whitesides league, was granted under date of August 10, 1824.³⁵⁷ Several other Whitesides are known to have been in Texas during this period, but if they were related to James Whitesides, the writer finds no evidence.³⁵⁸

³⁵⁵In addition to the instances cited in footnotes numbers 353 and 354 above, James Whitesides is found mentioned in the following connections: In a bill for surveying, signed by Horatio Chriesman, and dated at San Felipe de Austin, October 1, 1824, it is shown that two leagues were surveyed for James Whitesides. (Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 911.) *James Whitesides to Austin*, dated November 29, 1824, in which Whitesides asks regarding some land for the sons of his deceased brother, Jonathan (*Ibid.*, 978), *Austin to James Whitesides*, dated November 2, 1828, in which Austin requests a loan of twenty dollars from James Whitesides, giving as reason for such request that he was too busy with office affairs to go out collecting (*Ibid.* for 1922, II, 138), *James Whitesides to Austin*, dated at San Felipe de Austin, December 1, 1829, in which Whitesides gives a statement of money due him for taking care of sick persons (*Ibid.*, 321), *James Whitesides to Anthony Butler*, dated at Coles Settlement, August 2, 1832, a rather lengthy letter, in which Whitesides comments on the affair, at Anahuac, between Bradburn, Travis, and the Jacks, and advises that everybody in his section had declared for General Santa Anna (*Ibid.*, 829), *James Whitesides to Austin*, dated at San Felipe de Austin, September 4, 1832, in which Whitesides requests Austin to make certain payments to Samuel Marshall, which request was accepted by Austin (*Ibid.*, 824), and *James Whitesides to Austin*, dated at Coles Settlement, January 21, 1833, regarding land (*Ibid.*, 919).

³⁵⁶Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 978, and 1212.

³⁵⁷*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604, ff.

³⁵⁸There was a Boone Whitesides residing on the Navasota river, November 28, 1824. In the *Austin Papers* there is a letter from Boone Whitesides to Austin, of the above date, in which Boone Whitesides calls Austin's attention to the fact that he considers himself as much entitled to land as some other young men who had been given grants. (Barker, *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of the American Historical Association for 1919*, II, 978.) John P. Coles in a letter to Austin, dated January 7, 1826, mentions having been guardian to some Whitesides children, and refers to their uncle, to whom he says that he is willing

James Whitesides' wife was, before her marriage, Miss Betsey Deck (born February 10, 1786; died October 23, 1843). They had two sons, namely: Jinken (born November 19, 1811; died June 6, 1824), and John Tilford (born April 7, 1813; died May 13, 1892, and is buried at Hempstead, Texas).³⁵⁹ As a young man, John Tilford Whitesides served in the army of Texas during the rebellion against Mexico.³⁶⁰ He married (July 10, 1832), Miss Elizabeth Bingham (died June 4, 1859), by whom he had seven children, namely: Acye Hoxey (born March 19, 1843), Mary Terry (born February 11, 1840; died March 21, 1865), John F. Crawford (born July 19, 1847; died January 17, 1896), James Bingham (born October 7, 1851; died 1920), Franklin Terry (born March 12, 1856), Francis B. (born December 4, 1835; died February 23, 1847), and James Ashford (born September 2, 1850; died September 30, 1850).³⁶¹

to give them (*Ibid.*, 1245). A William B. Whitesides is found mentioned as having helped James Holland guard a prisoner, by the name of Hiram Friley, September 13, 1830. (Barker, "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Quarterly*, XXII, 190-191.)

³⁵⁹Whitesides' Family Bible. The records are there in the handwriting of James and John Tilford Whitesides. The writer found this Bible at the old Tilford Whitesides' homestead a few miles south of the town of Hempstead.

³⁶⁰*Mrs. James B. Whitesides to E. L. Blair*, dated at Hempstead, Texas, December 3, 1928, Mrs. James B. Whitesides is the widow of James Bingham Whitesides, son of Tilford Whitesides, mentioned above. The writer finds that John Tilford Whitesides was a member of the Association of Texas Veterans in 1873, and is listed as having furnished documentary evidence of having served in a military or political capacity of Texas between 1820 and 1836. (*Proceedings of the Association of Texas Veterans for 1873.*) Mrs. John Tilford Whitesides' name appears on the roll of the Texas Veterans as late as 1892. (*Proceedings of the Association of Texas Veterans for 1892.*)

³⁶¹Taken from the Whitesides Family Bible, and from *Mrs. James B. Whitesides to E. L. Blair*, dated at Hempstead, December 3, 1928. Concerning the above children of John Tilford and Elizabeth (Bingham) Whitesides, the writer finds that Acye Hoxey Whitesides died while trying to escape from a Federal prison, during the Civil War. The following is copied from a note, written over the signature of John Tilford Whitesides, in the Whitesides' Family Bible.

"Acy Hoxey Whiteside left Texas July 30, 1861, as a member of Hood's Brigade in the 4th Regiment. Fought in nine pitched battles, taken prisoner at Battle of Gettys-

John Tilford Whitesides' second wife was, before her marriage, Mrs. Josephine Wood, widow of Joseph Wood. The date of this second marriage was July 17, 1869. John Tilford

burg [a word here is blurred] 3rd day of July, 1863, sent to Fort Delaware and remained there until the 14th of November, same year, and from patriotism and Yankee cruelty was induced to attempt his escape and on the night of the 14th of November, 1863, was drowned in the Delaware river on bay . . . Thus fell my Dear Hoxey." (Signed by Jno. T. Whitside.)

The name of Acye Hoxey Whitesides does not appear on the original muster roll of the "Grimes County Grey," but is given by Polley in his book, *Hood's Texas Brigade*, 325-327. Polley states that he was taken prisoner at Gettysburg and died while attempting to escape. Mary Terry Whitesides married, March 21, 1861, Thos. C. Ashford (died in 1867, at Courtney, Texas), son of Simon Ashford of the Wallace Prairie community. Thos. C. Ashford served as a member of the Twenty-first Texas Cavalry, in Austin's Company, during the Civil War. (This information was given by *Joe Ashford to E. L. Blair*, December 3, 1928.) Thos. T. and Mary Terry Ashford left no children. John F. Crawford Whitesides was a Confederate veteran, having served in Watson's Company, of J. D. Gidding's Brigade, on the Rio Grande river, where he was stationed at the close of the war. This statement was made by Mr. Joe Ashford of Hempstead, Texas, who says that he was in the same company with John F. Crawford Whitesides. (*Joe Ashford to E. L. Blair*, December 3, 1928.) John F. Crawford married Sue Morrison, daughter of Judge Gwynn Morrison. Sue died January 27, 1893, at the age of forty-three years, six months, and sixteen days, having given birth to two children, namely: Frank and Annie. Frank Whitesides now resides at Hempstead, Texas. Annie Whitesides, his sister, is now Mrs. Duer of Houston, Texas, and has three children, namely: Camilla, now Mrs. Webie Whitesides of Houston, Texas; Earl, of Houston, and Autrey, also of Houston, Texas. James Bingham Whitesides married (July 2, 1873) Versie Morrison, daughter to Judge Gwynn Morrison, and sister to Sue, the wife of John Crawford Whitesides. James B. Whitesides died at Hempstead, Texas, in 1920, and is buried there. Mrs. James B. Whitesides is still living at Hempstead, Texas, and the writer wishes here to acknowledge his indebtedness to her for her valuable assistance in the preparation of this biographical sketch. Mrs. James B. Whitesides is the mother of four children, namely: Gertrude, Lillie, Lilian, and Maud. Gertrude Whitesides is now Mrs. J. L. Pope of Hempstead, Texas. She was formerly Mrs. Chatman, and has two children by her first marriage, namely: James Chatman, now married and living in Houston, Texas; and Catherine Chatman, now Mrs. S. Myers of Mexia, Texas. Lillie Whitesides is now Mrs. George Brown of Hempstead, Texas. They have no children. Lilian Whitesides was the late Mrs. George Phair. She is survived by three sons, namely: Earnest, now at Hollywood, California; Bradley, now married and living at Houston, Texas; and Milton, also of Houston, Texas. Maud Whitesides, youngest daughter of James B. Whitesides, died in youth at about thirteen years of age. Franklin Terry Whitesides, when last heard from by Mrs. James B. Whitesides, was living in

Whitesides had no children by his second wife. Mrs. Wood, however, at the time of her marriage to Whitesides, had a daughter, by her first husband, named Mary Wood (born September 30, 1860), who is now Mrs. Clarence Wier, of Hempstead, Texas.³⁶²

John J. Whitesides.—There is a one-league grant lying to the southwest of the James Whitesides league and directly north of the Caleb Wallace league, patented to John J. Whitesides, October 14, 1831.³⁶³ In the General Land Office, at Austin, Texas, is an application from this John J. Whitesides which shows him to have applied to Austin for land in De-

Kansas City, and was single. James Ashford Whitesides, youngest son of John Tilford Whitesides, died in infancy.

Since two of the sons of John Tilford Whitesides, namely John F. Crawford and James Bingham, married daughters of Judge Gwynn Morrison, the writer thinks it well to give what information he has at hand concerning the Morrison family. Gwynn Morrison (born February 16, 1809, in Orange county, New York) came to Texas at some time prior to the year 1836, joined the Texas army and served against Mexico. According to Mrs. James B. Whitesides of Hempstead, Texas, his daughter, Gwynn Morrison was in the Texas Army at the time of the Battle of San Jacinto, arriving on the scene of this battle on the day following the battle from the Goliad vicinity. He was enrolled as a member of the Texas Veteran Association in 1873, as having furnished documentary evidence of having served Texas in a military or political capacity between 1820 and 1836. (*Proceedings of the Association of Texas Veterans for 1873.*) Gwynn Morrison married Ann Roberts (born April 15, 1821, in Franklin county, Tennessee) on November 26, 1838. They were married at Montgomery, Texas, and the wedding ceremony was performed by Jesse Grimes. Gwynn Morrison and his wife, Ann, reared a large family of ten children, namely: Elizabeth Jane (born June 26, 1840), Matilda Ann (born February 9, 1842), John Tyler (born February 29, 1844), Mary Esther (born February 2, 1846), Susan Caroline (born August 13, 1849), Versenoy Devereaux (born May 15, 1853), Emma Sophronia (born January 27, 1856), Sarah Milletta (born May 15, 1859), William Gwynn (born October 5, 1861), and Florence Roberts (born December 10, 1864). (The writer copied the above data from a record found filed in the Whitesides Family Bible.)

There is in the Whitesides Family Bible a record of Thos. McKinney Whitesides who died, October 20, 1837; the writer, however, was unable to find out anything about him.

³⁶² *Joe Ashford to E. L. Blair*, December 3, 1928.

³⁶³ *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604; also, see map in appendix of this volume.

ember, 1826; and that he was then thirty years old; that his wife's name was Elizabeth, who was eighteen years of age; that they then had one child, a daughter; that they came to Texas from Missouri; and that John J. Whitesides was by occupation a farmer.³⁶⁴ Other than this, the writer has no information about John J. Whitesides, or his family.

Asa Yeamans.—The one league grant of Asa Yeamans is situated in the extreme southeastern portion of what is now Grimes county. The date of his patent is July 8, 1831.³⁶⁵ His land application, dated January of 1829, shows that he came to Texas from New York; that he was fifty-seven years old and married; that his wife, Jerusha, was fifty-two years old; that they had four children, three sons and one daughter; and that Asa Yeamans was a farmer by occupation.³⁶⁶ In the Probate records of Grimes county, the following heirs are given for Asa Yeamans: Joseph Yeamans, Daniel Yeamans, Mary Yeamans, Esther Yeamans, then (November 26, 1844) Mrs. W. Baxter, Horace Yeamans, and Caleb S. Yeamans.³⁶⁷ From what the writer can find out about this family, it seems that they left Grimes county at an early date (if indeed they ever really settled here) and located in Matagorda county. Joseph Yeamans sold his land in Grimes county to Aaron Shannon, August 27, 1841. At the time of the sale, Joseph was living in Matagorda county. The record concerning this sale mentions a D. Yeamans, a Daniel Yeamans, and Horace Yeamans, supposedly the brothers of Joseph,

³⁶⁴*Land Applications*, 49; of record in the General Land Office, at Austin, Texas.

³⁶⁵*Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604.

³⁶⁶*Land Applications*, 71; General Land Office of Texas.

³⁶⁷*Probate Deed Records of Grimes County*, LXXXIII, 582, 583-584, 589.

named above. No wife signs the deed with Joseph. The deed to Aaron Shannon is dated July 2, 1841.³⁶⁸

Abraham Zuber.—The Abraham Zuber league lies in the eastern part of Grimes county, a few miles south of the present little town of Shiro (formerly Prairie Plains). Abraham Zuber (born November 14, 1780, in Lancaster county,

³⁶⁸*Probate Deed Records of Grimes County*, LXXXIII, 582, 583-584, 589.

Since writing the above, the writer has secured from Mrs. E. M. Yeamans, 102 Bryan street, Houston, Texas, some additional information on the family of Asa Yeamans that is both interesting and valuable. It is now known that Asa Yeamans brought with him to Texas three sons, namely: Horace, Erastus, and Elias. Two of these, Erastus and Elias, were killed by the Mexicans, they having been with Fannin at Goliad. (*Photostat copy of a petition to the Texas Senate and House of Representatives, signed by Asa Yeamans, under date of September 28, 1836, certified to by Jane Y. McCallum, Secretary of State under date of December 13, 1929.*) Both of these boys joined the Texas Army on February 6, 1836, and belonged to Captain Westover's company with the rank of private. (*Photostat copy of a certificate dated May 17, 1837, signed by Albert Sidney Johnston, Secretary of War, and certified to by Fannie M. Wilcox, Acting State Librarian under date of December 12, 1927.*)

The other son of Asa Yeamans, Horace (born 1812), served in the Texas Army participating in the siege of Bexar retreat from Gonzales with Houston and fought at the Battle of San Jacinto (*E. M. Yeamans to E. L. Blair, dated Houston, Texas, September 7, 1930. The writer has not verified the above statement.*) After the war, Horace Yeamans lived with his parents on "Lower Caney, in Matagorda county until the death of the father, moving soon thereafter to the town of Matagorda. In the year 1838 he moved to his headright league located on Cashes creek. Horace Yeamans married Eliza Baxter, an emigrant from England, by whom he had six children, namely; Benjamin, Annie, Margrete, Daniel, Horace Moore, and Sallie. Of these children the writer has information about Horace Moore Yeamans only. It is known, however, that Margrete married a man by the name of Bruce, and that her father died at her home in Matagorda in 1908. Horace Moore Yeamans, son of Horace Yeamans, and grandson of Asa Yeamans, was born on Cashes creek in 1854. He married, November 10, 1880, Elese Marie La Bauve (Mrs. E. M. Yeamans mentioned above) who resided on East Carancahua creek, by whom he had four sons, all of whom are now living, namely: Linn Odelon (born November 13, 1885), Eugene Numa (born September 3, 1892), Charles Valcone (born December 11, 1894), and Victor Horace (born March 20, 1897). Linn O. Yeamans married Olive Gertrude Ranche. The family lives at Houston and there are two children, namely: Donald and Lucille Elliner. Eugene N. Yeamans married Ruth Jepson and resides at Houston, Texas. Charles V. Yeamans married Jeanette Lewis and they also reside at Houston. The other boy, Victor Horace Yeamans, is now (1930) unmarried and living at Houston. (*E. M. Yeamans to E. L. Blair, September 7, 1930.*)

Pennsylvania; died November 24, 1848, at his home in Grimes county, Texas) was the son of Abraham Zuber, Senior, (born in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, between the years 1740 and 1745; died in Oglethorpe county, Georgia, about 1802) and Mary Bartling (born in Denmark, about 1750; died in Georgia, in 1820).³⁶⁹ Abraham Zuber, Senior, was of pure German stock and grew up among people who spoke and wrote only the German language, commonly known as "Pennsylvania Dutch." Both he and his wife, Mary, were members of the Lutheran Church. During the American Revolution, Abraham Zuber, Senior, served as a soldier in the American army. He was in the service on August 26, 1780, with rank of lieutenant of the fifth company, fifth battalion, Lancaster County Associators.³⁷⁰ According to W. P. Zuber, he served the whole duration of the war. The parents of Abraham Zuber, Senior, were Daniel and Elizabeth Zuber.³⁷¹

³⁶⁹W. P. Zuber, *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*. This work has been published in pamphlet form, copy of which may be had from Mrs. J. T. Swanson, Navasota, Texas. The father of Mary Bartling, according to Zuber, was a Dr. Bartling, a physician, who moved from Denmark to London when Mary was about nine years of age; thence, six years later, to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, where he died. Zuber knows of only two children, namely: Mary and a son, Chrislieb. Chrislieb Bartling resided at Philadelphia; married and had two sons, Henry, and Charles, who were ship-masters. He was living in 1822, and wrote a letter to Abraham Zuber, in which he stated that he was then eighty-two years old.

³⁷⁰W. P. Zuber has a note written in the margin of his *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*, under date of December, 1905, in which he states as follows: "I now have the evidence from Luther R. Kelker, Custodian of Public Records, Pennsylvania State Library, Harrisburg, Pennsylvania. The record shows that Abraham Zuber was Lieutenant of 5th Company, 5th Battalion, Lancaster County Associators. In service, August 26, 1780."

³⁷¹W. P. Zuber, *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*, Daniel Zuber was a son of German parents who came to America from Hanover, Germany, and settled in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania. W. P. Zuber did not know whether Daniel was born in Germany or Pennsylvania, but he grew to manhood in Pennsylvania and lived there all of his life. W. P. Zuber mentions a grandson of Daniel Zuber, also named Daniel, who resided in Georgia, and his grandson wrote that his grandfather, Daniel, had been a rebel soldier in the American army during the revolution. Regarding Elizabeth Zuber, wife of Daniel, W. P.

In the year 1786, Abraham Zuber, Senior, sold his property in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, and migrated to Oglethorpe county, Georgia, where he purchased a farm on which he lived during the rest of his life. He and his wife, Mary, were the parents of thirteen children, twelve of whom lived to be adults; of these, about half were born in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, and the others in Oglethorpe county Georgia. The writer has the names of only six of these children, namely: Emanuel, Abraham, Daniel, John, Jacob, and Joshua.³⁷² As a young man, Abraham Zuber, Junior, learned the carpenter's trade. In the year 1814, he

Zuber states that he does not know where or when she was born, or what her maiden name was, but that she was of German descent; spoke the German language; and married Daniel in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania. He did not know the date.

³⁷²Emanuel Zuber died in Oglethorpe county, Georgia, being survived by one son, named Joseph, who died young. Joseph Zuber was survived by one infant daughter. Daniel Zuber, a son of Abraham Zuber, Senior, died in Floyd county, Georgia, at the age of seventy-five years. He was the father of thirteen sons, twelve of whom lived to maturity, and eleven of whom became fathers. Of these sons, the writer has the name of four, namely: William Moss, Daniel H., B. F., and Charles B. William Moss Zuber died in Rusk county, Texas, and was survived by two daughters, namely: Martha and Amanda. Martha, in 1910, was Mrs. Martha Ritig of Minden, Texas; Amanda was then (1910) Mrs. Martha Hull of Gary, Texas; Daniel Zuber, in 1904, was Post Master at Kilgore, Texas; B. F. Zuber was residing near the town of Benton, Arkansas, in the year 1880; and Charles B. Zuber (died in Georgia) had two daughters, namely: Elizabeth and Mary, and a son, B. H. Zuber. Elizabeth was a widow and resided in Corsicana, in 1910. Her brother and sister, Mary and B. H., then (1910) lived in San Antonio, Texas. Mary and Elizabeth Zuber married two brothers by the name of Swanson. Both were widows in 1910. John Zuber, son of Abraham Zuber, Senior, died in Lowndes county, Alabama, at the age of seventy-five years. He was survived by two sons and several daughters. Of these, the writer has the name of only one son, Earley Emanuel Zuber, who lived on his farm near Grub Gulch, California, in 1900. He was then eighty-two years old and unmarried. The other son died unmarried. Jacob Zuber, son of Abraham Zuber, Senior, died young, being survived, however by a son named Jefferson, who, in 1865, was a farmer near Vicksburg, Mississippi, and then had three unmarried daughters. Joshua Zuber died in Oktibaha county, Mississippi, survived by ten daughters, about whom the writer has no information. (Zuber, *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber.*)

became a merchant, establishing a country store in Putnam county, Georgia; thence, after one year, he established himself as a merchant in the town of Marion, Twiggs county, Georgia; thence in 1816, he moved to a farm which he had purchased, about three miles from the town of Marion; thence, in 1822, having sold his farm in Twiggs county, Georgia, he moved to Montgomery county, Alabama; thence, in 1824, he moved to East Feliciana parish, Louisiana; thence, in 1827, to Saint Helena parish, Louisiana; thence, in 1830, to the District of Aes, now San Augustine county, Texas (he had visited Texas in 1827, 1828, and in 1829); thence, in 1831, to Harrisburg, on Buffalo Bayou; thence, in 1832, to a farm on the east edge of the Brazos bottom, in the District of Brazoria, about twenty-five miles north of the town of Brazoria; thence, in 1833, to his headright league in what is now Grimes county.³⁷³ It seems that Zuber had no intention of making Harrisburg his permanent location, but merely stored his household goods there until he could locate a suitable league of land. Such a location was chosen, in 1832,

³⁷³W. P. Zuber, *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*. W. P. Zuber says that the reason his father changed from a merchant to a farmer, in 1816, was that his wife, Mary Ann Mann, whom he married, February 16, 1816, had inherited from her grandfather, Robert Deshazo, "a lot of valuable negroes," which enabled him (Zuber) to become a farmer of considerable importance.

Robert Deshazo, according to W. P. Zuber, was born in Virginia in the year 1730, being a son of Nathaniel Deshazo, who was born in France. It is given by Zuber, that Lewis Deshazo, eldest son of Robert, enlisted in the American Revolutionary army at the age of sixteen, while his father, Robert Deshazo, then living in North Carolina, participated in the local struggle between the Whigs and Tories, on the side of the Whigs. Mollie Trevelian (born in Virginia, in 1732), wife of Robert Deshazo, was the daughter of parents, one of whom came to America from Scotland, and the other from Ireland. Her brother, John Trevelian, served in the Virginia Militia in the campaign against Fort Duequesne in 1855 and fought in the Battle of Monongahela, where he was captured by the French, and was held for some time as a prisoner in Canada. (The writer has verified none of the above, but gives it as given by W. P. Zuber in his *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*.)

in the District of Brazoria, but when the survey was attempted, it was found to include much land that had already been granted to another man. This accounts for the move into what is now Grimes county, in the year 1833.³⁷⁴ The land application of Abraham Zuber is dated in February of 1831. It shows that Zuber was then fifty years old; that his wife, Mary Ann, was thirty-seven years old; that they had one son, one daughter, and four negro slaves; that they came from the District of Aes (spelled in the application Aises); and that Zuber was by occupation a farmer.³⁷⁵ On the land granted to Zuber was an abandoned Kickapoo Indian village, around which were several patches where the Indians had planted corn, and there was left standing several Indian cabins, into which Zuber moved his family in 1833, and continued to use them for dwellings until 1839, when his new house was completed. This new house was a double-room log building, and stood about two miles west of the old Indian cabins on the site where now stands the home of E. F. Edwards, who is still (1924) using the well dug by Zuber in 1839.³⁷⁶ It is said that when Zuber arrived in this section, he was loaned a cook and several other negroes by Jared E. Groce, until he (Zuber) could supply himself with servants of his own.³⁷⁷ Abraham Zuber served as the first District Clerk of Montgomery county (organized in 1836) and his deputy was Doctor Charles B. Stewart, who became his successor.³⁷⁸

³⁷⁴W. P. Zuber, *Eighty Years in Texas*, 131-132. This is an unpublished manuscript found in the Archives of the State Library, Austin, Texas.

³⁷⁵*Land Applications*, 97, of record in the General Land Office, Austin, Texas.

³⁷⁶Mrs. E. F. Edwards, "History of Shiro," *Navasota Daily Examiner*, October 22, 1924.

³⁷⁷Rosa G. Berleth, "Jared E. Groce," *Quarterly*, XX, 367.

³⁷⁸Zuber, *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*.

As stated above, Abraham Zuber married (February 16, 1816) Mary Ann Mann (born September 18, 1793; died in Grimes county, October 20, 1879). They were parents to two children, namely: William Physich (born July 6, 1820, in Twiggs county, Georgia; died September 22, 1913, at his home in Grimes county, Texas), and Mary Ann Deshazo, (born in East Feliciana Parish, Louisiana, April 15, 1826; died on the Zuber homestead in Grimes county, Texas, 1881). William P. Zuber was thirteen years old when his parents settled in what is now Grimes county, and, though only sixteen years old, served in the Texas army during the San Jacinto Campaign as a member of Captain James Gillespie's Company, Colonel Sidney Sherman's Regiment. The duration of this particular period of service was from March 1, 1836, to June 1, 1836.³⁷⁹ Mr. W. P. Zuber states that he was also a soldier in the Texas army during several Indian campaigns. He was also a Confederate veteran, having joined the Southern army, March 20, 1862, as a member of Company H.,

³⁷⁹Zuber, *Eighty Years in Texas*. (MS.). Also *Pension Papers*, No. 231, Archives of the State Library, at Austin, Texas. In the *W. D. Miller Papers*, II, is found a roll of the sick and detailed men remaining at the upper encampment during the Battle of San Jacinto, April 21, 1836, by order of the Commander-in-chief, and under the command of Major McNutt . . . The names on this roll are approved and reported correct by the Veteran Board composed of Col. F. W. Johnson, Col. Jno. M. Wade, and Judge Edwin Waller, appointed by Governor Roberts to pass upon application for Pension, and authorized by act of the Sixteenth Legislature. The report of this committee was approved on April 26, 1879, and Mr. W. P. Zuber's name appears on the roll. (*Harriet Smither to E. L. Blair*, November 9, 1928. Miss Smither was the Archivist of the State Library, at Austin, Texas.) Mr. W. P. Zuber states in his application for pension, November 16, 1870, that he was detailed on guard, April 19, 1836, at the upper camp at Harrisburg, for the protection of the sick and wounded. Jonathan S. Collard and Benjamin W. Robinson made affidavits to this effect on November 16, 1870. These two men were in Captain Weir's company and were detailed on the same duty. (*Pension Papers*, No. 231, Archives Texas State Library.) Zuber's name appears on the rolls of the Association of Texas Veterans for the years 1892, 1893, and 1905. (*Proceedings of the Association of Texas Veterans for 1892, 1893, and 1905*, pages 3-7, 14, and 3, respectively.)

Twenty-first Texas Cavalry, in which organization he served until the end of the war.³⁸⁰ W. P. Zuber seems to have cared little for politics. The only public office he ever held seems to have been that of Justice of the Peace in precinct number two of Grimes county from 1876 to 1878.³⁸¹ During the last years of his life, he spent much time writing and, though his writings have not been widely published, they possess much interest in value, especially in connection with a work such as the writer has undertaken. Three of Mr. Zuber's works have been of especial value to the writer, namely: *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*, *Memoirs of Zuber*, and *Eighty Years in Texas*. His *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber* is a sixteen page pamphlet, published in 1905, and dated at Iola, Texas, July, 1905. *Memoirs of Zuber* is in manuscript form and seems to have been written at the suggestion of Mr. T. P. Buffington, of Anderson, Texas. This is in the nature of a history of the town of Anderson and vicinity. It is dated June 26, 1903, and the original is now (1929) in the possession of Mr. T. P. Buffington, of Anderson, Texas. *Zuber's Eighty Years in Texas* is a manuscript of more than six hundred pages, the original being in the Archives of the State Library at Austin, Texas. On July 17, 1851, W. P. Zuber married Louisa Liles (died March 15, 1904, in Grimes county), by whom he had three children, namely: Daniel Carl (born November 12, 1854; died May 26, 1902), Rachel Zerena, and James Andrew.³⁸² Mary Ann Deshazo Zuber, sister of W.

³⁸⁰Zuber, *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*.

³⁸¹*Ibid.*

³⁸²*Ibid.* At the time of his death, May 26, 1902, Daniel Carl Zuber was residing in Bryan, Texas, where he had been engaged in the mercantile business. He married in March, 1882, Julia Johnson (born May 23, 1861), daughter of Raymond Baldwin Johnson, formerly of Bedias community in Grimes county, by whom he has two daughters, namely: Edna (born December 10, 1882), and Mabel. Daniel Carl

P. Zuber, married Joseph Rush Edwards (born in Tennessee, 1824; died at the Zuber homestead in Grimes county, 1904) on April 22, 1847. The marriage took place at the Zuber

Zuber's second wife, was, before her marriage, Zannie McDougal, by whom he had two children, namely: Margaret and Neill. Edna Zuber is now Mrs. J. T. Swanson of Navasota, Texas, and is the mother of three sons, namely: James, Daniel, and Jarrett Cook; all of whom reside at Navasota with their parents. This family is typical of the best citizenship in Grimes county. Mr. J. T. Swanson is in the wholesale grocery business, and the local people take great pride in the fact that he, with one or two other men of Grimes county, was responsible for the idea of having Texas go on a wheatless basis for a period of three months during the World War, thereby making available millions of pounds of flour to be shipped to our soldiers and the soldiers of our allies in Europe. The part played by Mr. J. T. Swanson in this movement is clearly shown from the following quotation, taken from a speech made by Hon. Pat N. Fahey on Thanksgiving Day, 1918, and published in the *Navasota Daily Examiner* under date of November 30, 1918.

"This idea of a three months period of wheatless days constitutes Navasota's notable and unique contribution to the cause of our country and humanity during the year for whose blessing we are today giving thanks to God. . . . Early in the year (1918) this fellow citizen of ours (J. T. Swanson) took a trip over the greater part of Grimes county. Various food distributors whom he interviewed agreed to divide certain shipments of flour which they were expecting with other distributors of the country. One of them (Earl Yeager of Iola, Texas) offered to turn his car of flour over to the government. On returning to Navasota our fellow citizen (J. T. Swanson) communicated again with these food distributors. He suggested that they each and all let the government have their flour. They readily assented to his suggestion. The offer of the flour was made to the national food administration and was accepted . . . as a result this town and this county voluntarily went on a wheatless basis for a period of three months. This idea took hold of the imagination of the people of Texas and this example of self-sacrifice was enthusiastically followed by the whole state."

For additional information regarding the wheatless movement, see printed correspondence and press notices in the Appendix VII this thesis.

Mabel Zuber, daughter of Daniel C. Zuber, is now Mrs. H. H. Allridge of Denver, Colorado, and is the mother of four children, namely: Katherine, Bernice, Hugh, and Frances. Margaret Zuber, daughter of Daniel C. Zuber, is now a member of the public school faculty at Bryan, Texas. Neill Daniel Zuber is living at Little Rock, Arkansas.

Rachel Zerena Zuber, daughter of W. P. Zuber, is now Mrs. Samuel P. Mize of Waco, Texas, and is the mother of five children, namely: Ruby, Maude, Austin, Morris, and Bascom. Ruby Mize is now Mrs. Walter McMillan of Waco, Texas. Maude Mize is also married and living at Waco. Morris Mize is married and living at San Antonio, Texas.

James Andrew Zuber, son of W. P. Zuber, married Lillie Owen of Bedias, Texas. They now reside at Lufkin, Texas, have several children, some of whom are, namely: Shannon, Willena, Blanche, and Annie. There are other children whose names the writer does not have. Zuber, *Ancestry and Kindred of W. P. Zuber*, also Mrs. J. T. Swanson to E. L. Blair, July 11, 1929.

homestead, where Mary Ann and her husband resided as long as they lived. They reared a large family of four sons and three daughters, namely: Sarah Cornelia, William Oscar, Mary Elizabeth, Warren O., Elisha Floyd, Virginia, and Ed Austin. All of these children were living in July of 1905.³⁸³

³⁸³Sarah Cornelia Edwards was the late Mrs. R. Brooks Gooch of Granite, Oklahoma. The writer has no data on this family, but it is thought that she had several children. William Oscar Edwards (born May 7, 1849, at Shiro, Texas; died February 16, 1915) married Georgia E. Foster (born November 7, 1847; died February 3, 1881) on November 7, 1872. Six children were born to this union, all of whom are dead except two, namely: Sally (born June 21, 1877) and Lizzie (born January 16, 1876). Sallie is now Mrs. Sam Norman of Huntsville, Texas. She was married on September 3, 1899. They have four children, namely: Georgia, Lillian, Aubrey (a boy), and Ruby. Lizzie Edwards is now Mrs. R. A. Hoke of Huntsville, and is the mother of four children, namely: Foster, Emma, Louise, and Roy. Mary Elizabeth Edwards married Charles M. Gooch and died at Temple, Texas, several years ago, being survived by several children, some of whom are Nettie, Willie, Charlie, Lidia, and Katie. Nettie is married and living at Galveston. Charles lives at Temple. Willie is dead, and the writer has no information about the others. Warren O. Edwards is now a Cumberland Presbyterian minister and lives at Teague, Texas. Elisha Floyd Edwards married Bertie Armstead and they are living at Houston. They had three children, namely: Marvin, Mattie Laura, and Porter. Porter died in 1929. Virginia Edwards married a Mr. Mayfield and lives at Houston. They have several children, two of whom are Jessie and Mary. Ed Austin Edwards is living on the old Zuber homestead in Grimes county, and has never married. *Mrs. J. T. Swanson to E. L. Blair*, July 4, 1929; *Mrs. C. E. Henry to E. L. Blair*, July 28, 1929; and *Mrs. R. A. Hoke to E. L. Blair*, July 24, 1929.

Appendixes

APPENDIX I

LIST OF PERSONS WHO WERE GRANTED LAND IN WHAT IS NOW GRIMES COUNTY BY THE GOVERNMENT OF THE UNITED STATES.¹

Name	Leagues	Date of Patent
1. Armour, Robert.....	1	October 5, 1835
2. Arnold, Daniel.....	1	May 9, 1831
3. Babbitt, Benjamin.....	1/4	November 22, 1832
4. Bell, James.....	3/4	December 2, 1832 (a)
5. Black, John S.....	1	April 6, 1831
6. Black, Marcus D.....	1/4	April 6, 1831
7. Bowman, John.....	1	April 6, 1831
8. Bowman, Samuel.....	1	October 16, 1835
9. Brown, Alexander.....	1	May 17, 1831
10. Burney, William.....	1	April 6, 1831
11. Campbell, Cyrus.....	1	October 22, 1835
12. Conner, John C.....	1	October 22, 1835 (b)
13. Cox, James.....	1	May 28, 1832
14. Cornaugh, Hannah.....	1	December 19, 1832
15. FitzGibbons, William.....	1	April 6, 1831
16. Fulton, Samuel.....	1	April 9, 1831
17. Garrett, Claiborne.....	1/4	December 3, 1832
18. Gillett, Heirs of J.....	1	March 27, 1831
19. Greenwood, Franklin J.....	1	April 7, 1831
20. Greenwood, Joel.....	1	May 13, 1831
21. Gregg, Darius.....	1/4	April 6, 1831
22. Grimes, Jesse.....	1	April 6, 1831
23. Groce, Jared E.....	3	July 29, 1831
24. Groce, Leonard W.....	1	April 21, 1831
25. Hadley, Joshua.....	1	May 7, 1831
26. Harris, John.....	1/4	October 16, 1832
27. Hays, Jacob.....	1	April 8, 1831
28. Holland, Francis.....	1	August 10, 1824
29. Holland, James.....	1/4	April 7, 1831

¹Copied from *Abstract of Texas Land Titles*, I, 604 ff.

(a) Four-fifths in Waller county.

(b) Two-fifths in Waller county.

	Name	Leagues	Date of Patent
30.	Holland, William.....	1	August 10, 1824
31.	Jack, Patrick C.....	1/4	April 6, 1831
32.	Jackson, Isaac.....	1	August 7, 1824
33.	Jones, Timothy.....	1	October 24, 1835
34.	Kennard, Anthony Drew.....	1	November 2, 1823
35.	Landrum, John.....	1	April 10, 1831
36.	Laughlin, William.....	1/4	April 11, 1831
37.	McDonald, Thomas.....	1	October 5, 1835
38.	McDowell, M.....	1	October 17, 1835
39.	McGriffin (McGuffin) Wm....	1	November 12, 1832
40.	McIntire, William.....	1/4	April 6, 1831
41.	McIntire, Margaret.....	1	April 5, 1831
42.	McMahan, Daniel B.....	1	October 16, 1835
43.	Montgomery, William.....	1	May 4, 1831
44.	McNealy, Jesse B.....	1	April 11, 1831
45.	Moore, James W.....	1	October 20, 1835
46.	Moore, John.....	1	April 15, 1831
47.	Pankey, James W.....	1	October 19, 1835
48.	Payne, John.....	1	October 16, 1835 (c)
49.	Peterson, John.....	1	April 2, 1831
50.	Pitts, Heirs of Obediah.....	1	October 29, 1835 (d)
51.	Ray, Robert.....	1/4	April 9, 1831
52.	Rea, Andrew.....	1/4	June 18, 1831
53.	Simms, Ignacius.....	1	October 26, 1835 (e)
54.	Townsend, William.....	1	October 20, 1835 (f)
55.	Tyler, Daniel.....	1/4	October 22, 1835
56.	Vince, Allen.....	1/2	April 30, 1831 (g)
57.	Walker, Tandy.....	1	April 27, 1831
58.	Wallace, Caleb.....	1	May 14, 1828
59.	Wallace, James.....	1	April 9, 1831
60.	White, Dudley J.....	1	May 31, 1831 (h)
61.	Whitesides, John J.....	1	October 14, 1831

(c) Three-fifths in Madison county.

(d) Four-fifths in Waller county.

(e) Two-fifths in Madison county.

(f) One-fifth in Madison county.

(g) One-fourth in Montgomery county.

(h) One-third in Montgomery county.

Name	Leagues	Date of Patent
62. Whitesides, James.....	1	July 16, 1824 (i)
63. Yeamans, Asa.....	1	July 8, 1831
64. Zuber, Abraham.....	1	March 4, 1833

(i) One-fifth in Brazos county.

APPENDIX II

MAP SHOWING THE LOCATION OF THE LAND GRANTS OF THE
SIXTY-FOUR MEMBERS OF STEPHEN F. AUSTIN'S COLONY
WHO SETTLED IN WHAT IS NOW GRIMES COUNTY.

The map shown below was prepared for the writer by Mr. Frank Purvis, while a senior in the Navasota high school, 1929. The map was prepared by taking an official map of the county and copying therefrom only the grants of the sixty-four colonists concerned. It will be noticed that the important creeks and towns are also shown.

APPENDIX III

The following is a photostatic copy of the original muster roll of the Grimes County Greys that formed Company G of Hood's Texas Brigade. The Original is in the Archives of the State Library, Austin, Texas.

The Grimes County Greys

Mr. The undersigned do hereby enlist and enroll ourselves as a part of the five thousand men called for by the Government of the Confederate States & will organize into a company and report ourselves to James H. Murray as a part of the regiment provided the term of service does not exceed twelve months for which said men are to enlist.

- Captain in pro Mr. Deutcherson
 First Lieutenant in Joseph H. Dunham
 Second Lieutenants in John R. Kemward
 " " Robert H. Baccus
 Orderly Sergeant in E. H. Hottel
 " " I. M. Bookman
 " " R. H. Wood
 " " D. S. Rake
 Corporals in
 " Ben Goodrich
 " Jesse Raker
 " J. H. Ramseyer
 " W. H. McIntosh

- | | | | |
|----|----------------|----|------------------|
| 13 | Prof. Atkinson | 18 | Thomas A. Gaines |
| 14 | Leahuel Atkins | 19 | W. A. Tucker |
| 15 | Martin Atkin | 20 | W. H. Camp |
| 16 | R. W. Smith | 21 | J. H. Baker |
| 17 | J. F. Barnes | 22 | J. H. Camp |

23 J. L. Puffingorn
 24 L. W. Zater
 20 W. H. Brown
 26 E. M. Atty
 27 J. P. Ketchikan
 18 H. B. Roger
 29 W. B. Erdman
 30 L. W. Blact
 31 H. L. Cotton
 32 P. L. Churchard
 33 J. M. Dickson
 34 J. B. Duke
 35 J. M. Dittell
 36 J. J. Dance
 37 F. A. Lawkins
 38 J. H. Flournoy
 39 L. E. Floyd
 40 J. C. Finley
 41 J. N. Fiegel
 42 W. F. Gristick
 43 J. L. Giles
 44 J. J. Goodwin
 45 E. Skiles
 46 L. E. Gristick
 47 John Fisher
 48 J. A. Gould
 49 W. B. Harrison
 50 A. S. Keelmer
 51 Robert Handley
 52 E. J. Rex
 53 J. A. Jones
 44 J. W. Jones
 50 J. J. Garrison
 56 W. A. Jackson

57 J. A. Jackson
 58 L. A. Jones
 59 A. B. Leonard
 60 W. A. Loper
 61 H. E. Lee
 62 G. C. Lawrence
 63 L. A. Sinton
 64 W. A. Marten
 65 J. M. Montgomery
 66 J. J. Marten
 67 J. W. Mayer
 68 J. W. S. Mays
 69 J. A. Miskiff
 70 E. J. Miskiff
 71 W. M. Muttler
 72 J. J. Muldrew
 73 J. M. Henry
 74 J. J. Myers
 75 John S. My
 76 Wm. Holland
 77 J. H. Hester
 78 J. M. Petuh
 79 J. P. Parnell
 80 J. W. Plaster
 81 J. S. Pearson
 82 R. P. Pickett
 83 R. P. Pickett
 84 J. M. Pickett
 85 J. M. Pickett
 86 J. M. Pickett
 87 J. M. Pickett
 88 J. M. Pickett
 89 J. M. Pickett
 90 J. M. Pickett

91 W Schultz
92 Brewster
93 W Sollock
94 Henry Smith
95 D Sibourbank
96 John Grant
97 E J Powell
98 H. Turner
99 I Winston

100 J. Williams
101 Lettward
102 M. White
103 J. K. Whitehead
104 A. H. Wood
105 M. S. Monack
W. J. W.

The following is the muster roll of Company G, Fourth Regiment, Hood's Texas Brigade, as published by J. B. Polley in his *Hood's Texas Brigade*, pages 325-327.

MUSTER ROLL OF FOURTH REGIMENT, COMPANY G,
HOOD'S TEXAS BRIGADE.

1. Adkinson, John J., Lieut.; wounded.
2. Adams, Sam H.
3. Aikens, James O.; wounded.
4. Allen, W. J.
5. Arnett, David
6. Bassett, Robert H., Lieut. and Adj. of Regiment; disabled at Chickamauga.
7. Bassett, Noah H.; wounded, died in Texas.
8. Barry, Wm. E., Lieut.; disabled at the Wilderness.
9. Barry, L. Howard, O. Sergt.; was wounded several times.
10. Barry, John D.; killed at Chickamauga.
11. Barry, Thos. W.
12. Baines, Thos. W., Sergt.
13. Baines, Wm. M.
14. Barnes, John T.
15. Baker, Jesse W., Lieut.
16. Barker, James, Scout.
17. Beecher, R. A., O. Sergt.; killed at Gettysburg.
18. Blackshear, Robt. D.; wounded at Sharpsburg and Spotsylvania Court House.
19. Blackshear, Jas. J., Sergt.; wounded.
20. Blackshear, Duncan R.; wounded twice.
21. Blackshear, E. T.
22. Boozer, H. D.
23. Bookman, J. M. (Bob), Lieut.; killed at Chickamauga.
24. Butts, Lewis D., Lieut.; killed at Gaines' Mill.
25. Biffington, Tom C., Lieut. and Captain.
26. Brietz, A. C., Ordnance Sergt.; wounded at Wilderness.
27. Bowen, Allen
28. Chambers, G. C.; killed at Sharpsburg.
29. Churchwell, Thomas; killed at Chickamauga.
30. Charley, Martin F.

31. Closs, T. O.; killed at Gettysburg.
32. Chatham, Wm. B.; wounded at Wilderness.
33. Cruse, A. J.; killed at Gaines' Mill.
34. Cotton, H. T.
35. Collins, Daniel; chief bugler from commencement to Appomattox; dead.
36. Cook, J. J.
37. Dance, John T.; wounded at Gaines' Mill.
38. Dawkins, F. A.
39. Damm, Frank; wounded at Gettysburg.
40. Davis, E. C.
41. Daffan, Lawrence A.
42. Davis, John A.
43. Dunham, Chas. H., Lieut.
44. Duke, Joseph G.; mortally wounded at Chickamauga.
45. Eckolls, Wm. R. A.; lost arm at Gaines' Mill.
46. Ferrell, Davis S.; killed at Gettysburg.
47. Finley, J. R.
48. Fields, Drury H.
49. Floyd, Chas E.
50. Floyd, Wm.
51. Flournoy, Jas. J.; wounded at Gaines' Mill.
52. Gay, G. A.; disabled at Gaines' Mill.
53. Gould, Jas. L., Sergt.; mortally wounded at Gettysburg.
54. Green, John E.; killed at Gettysburg.
55. Griffin, David C.; wounded at Gaines' Mill.
56. Grissett, Wm. J., Com. Sergt.
57. Giles, Jas. J.
58. Giles, E. D.
59. Giles, P. L.
60. Giles, Dan
61. Haddon, Mack E.; killed at Second Manassas.
62. Harrison, M. M. (Smoky)
63. Hasson, Robert; lost leg at Darbytown.
64. Helmer, Edward
65. Hadon, Jas. J.
66. Hiatt, J. W.
67. Heyman, George

68. Hubbell, N. L.
69. Hughes, W. T.
70. Hutcheson, J. W., first Captain of Company G.; killed at Gaines' Mill.
71. Jackson, Isaac
72. Jackson, Job; lost leg at Sharpsburg.
73. Jones, W. S.; killed at Gaines' Mill.
74. Jones, N. B.
75. Jones, G. W.
76. Jones, I. Newton.
77. Kay, Eli
78. Kennard, A. Drew
79. Kendall, J. L.
80. King, Jno. H.
81. Lawrence, Groce; killed at Wilderness.
82. Livingston, A.
83. Loggins, Dr. Jas. C.
84. Loper, Wm. deserted.
85. Martin, Wm. A.
86. Martin, John F., Sergt.
87. May, J. W. T., Color Guard; wounded at Second Manassas.
88. McCowen, John;; killed at Chickamauga.
89. McDaniel, Ben H.
90. McClenny, Wm.; killed at Wilderness.
91. McGregor, Wm. B.
92. Midkiff, J. A.; wounded at Wilderness.
93. Midkiff, E. P.; killed at Gaines' Mill.
94. Montgomery, Joseph
95. Moss, Geo. R.
96. Mooring, Chas. G.; wounded several times.
97. Mooring, J. S. (Bob); wounded at Wilderness, disabled.
98. Muldrew, Jno. T.
99. Muse, Jas. T.; wounded at Gaines' Mill.
100. Nix, Jno. L.; wounded at Gettysburg.
101. Nelms, Everard P.; wounded at Gaines' Mill.
102. Nettles, Joseph H.
103. Neal, French
104. Pearce, Ben W.; wounded at Sharpsburg.

105. Pearce, Ed. W.; lost hand at Gaines' Mill.
106. Parnell, Jas. C.
107. Patterson, Wm. R.
108. Peteet, W. B.
109. Peteet, J. Monroe; wounded at Gaines' Mill.
110. Pinckney, Richard H.; youngest soldier in regiment.
111. Pinckney, Jno. M.; wounded several times.
112. Plaster, Joseph H.; wounded at Gaines' Mill and Wilderness.
113. Plaster, Frank
114. Qualls, Geo. S.; Color Corporal.
115. Reynolds, J. S.
116. Rogerson, John; killed at Gaines' Mill.
117. Roach, John, Lieut.; killed.
118. Roco, A. C.
119. Rowe, H. T.
120. Robinson, John
121. Stacy, John J., Color Corporal; wounded at Gettysburg.
122. Scott, J. H.; killed at Gaines' Mill.
123. Scott, Garrett; killed at Sharpsburg.
124. Schultz, W. A.
125. Shaffer, Henry E.
126. Smith, W. H.
127. Silverbaugh, A.; killed at Chickamauga.
128. Spencer, Chas. W.; mortally wounded at Eltham's Landing.
129. Stewart, A. Jackson; wounded at Gettysburg.
130. Stacy, Willis A.; wounded at Gaines' Mill and Wilderness.
131. Terrell, E. Tom, Asst. Surgeon.
132. Terrell, Wm. H.
133. Tidwell, Wm. C.
134. Thomas, J. W. (Gotch)
135. Trant, John; wounded at Gaines' Mill and killed at Sharpsburg.
136. Turner, Jasper
137. Tierner, Wesley
138. Wilson, Walter S.; wounded at Second Manassas.
139. Watson, A. E.
140. Webb, Frank X.
141. Whitehurst, J. K.

142. White, Mathew, D.
143. White, Caleb; killed at Gaines' Mill.
144. Whitesides, A. Hoxcey; captured at Gettysburg and drowned in effort to escape.
145. Whitlock, A. T.
146. Williams, Henry F.
147. Williams, Jas. J.; wounded at Gaines' Mill.
148. Wood, Dan A.; wounded several times.
149. Ward, Chas. H.
150. Womack, M. S.; captured at Gettysburg.
151. Wood, Rufus H., Sergt.
152. Wallingford, T. G.; Litter bearer.¹

¹Polley, J. B., *Hood's Texas Brigade*, pp. 325-327, Neale Pub. Co. (1910), New York.

APPENDIX IV

There follow photostatic copies of Grimes county muster rolls during the Civil War which are found in the Archives of the State Library. They are self-explanatory.

List of members of the Dickson Range
Grimes County Texas. a Cavalry Company

Names

Name.

Thos Come
D H Dickson
A M Brown
Jas I Scott
Edw Hornmack
J W R Finch
William Dodd
Ach Garriv
A Coleman
A F Hewat
J F Kennel
Jm B Linton
E M Lines
Jas A M Ligon
Demil M Lintz
F M Magu
G J Magu
George H Nash
E J Siblette
R D Dye
A R Dye
Jas B Dye
Jas Phelps
Jas M Rogers
B H S Rogers
W R Reynolds
Jas Stephenson
J H Turner
H J Turner

B S Whiting
J E Hornmack
George Weston
G R A Whiting
E Garriv
Chas Magu
Chas Mitchell
Benj Goodrich
George H Lines
Joz Adkins
J W Winston

Company in & about Anderson
part of No 3 But since County

A. D. Storey Captain
 Miles Mosley 1st Lieutenant
 C. C. Lawson 2nd Do
 John H. King 3rd Do

Privates

Sam May	1	Frank Bignier	26
Jackson Harrison	2	A. Henson	27
Henry Fuqua	3	G. F. Henson	28
F. Fuqua	4	Joe Taylor	29
John Lynch	5	James C. Williams	30
Jefferson Hughes	6	Sam Graves	31
Patrick Fuqua	7	F. H. Hill	32
John Lynton	8	O. H. Hill	33
L. J. Houston	9	W. A. Green	34
Joe White	10	J. B. Searcy	35
John Harrison	11	Jas. A. McGuire	36
Eng. Tarham	12	James Stevenson	37
A. L. Willis	13	D. B. Busic	38
David Wilson	14	G. Murrin	39
R. G. Leavel	15	John D. Adams	40
W. J. Leavel	16	A. C. Magee	41
John Owen	17	Geo. Nash	42
John Buchanan	18	Louis Wilson	43
Colbin Hobbs	19	John Gray	44
Wade Brant	20	John Mickie	45
James Anington	21	F. W. Baumgartner	46
H. B. Aillyer	22	O. Raymond	47
H. A. Neal	23	C. Mann	48
F. A. Webb	24	J. A. Kern	49
R. S. Thomas	25	A. B. Fuller	50
W. C. Roe	57		

D. F. Hair 52
 J. P. Hair 53
 B. S. Whiting 54
 C. M. Leach 55
 J. B. Finch 56
 J. P. Shaffer 57
 John Durrant 58
 Geo. Weston 59
 Jas. Angley 60
 Jas. Miller 61
 J. S. Baumgardner 62
 Tom Leach 63
 J. E. Johnson 64
 R. Dunning 65
 Jas. Scott 66
 C. W. Leighton 67
 S. L. Scott 68
 Theod. Graves 69
 D. C. Dickson 70
 Geo. Cronfoot 71
 Joe Lawless 72
 R. W. Jeter 73
 J. R. Montgomery 74
 H. B. Kelly 75
 W. Kelly 76
 Edd Bowen 77
 J. M. Bowen 78
 A. J. Post 79
 W. S. Post 80
 A. C. Mims 81
 F. K. Collins 82
 L. G. Jansen 83
 Felix Taylor 84
 Rob. Sanders 85
 J. I. Yarbrough 86

W. Harbucke 87
 John Gray 88
 A. Mansfield 89
 As. Livingston 90
 A. Collman 91
 E. Bell 92
 J. J. Haynie 93
 Jas. Turner 94
 Mark Turner 95
 F. Turner 96
 Thos. Churchwell 97
 R. W. Bennett 98
 U. Haynie 99
 G. R. A. Whiting 100
 Henry Hair 101
 F. Burgess 102
 Geo. Stanley 103
 E. Magee 104
 Geo. W. Lewis 105
 G. W. Cannoll 106
 J. B. Edmondson 107
 Geo. Scott 108
 J. M. Busby 109
 J. Schwalby 110
 F. Schwalby 111
 W. Loggins 112
 W. Reynolds 113
 J. P. McCune 114
 Jas. L. Collins 115
 John Loggins 116
 W. Brown 117
 Geo. W. Brown 118
 W. Oliver 119
 W. C. Tidwell 120
 M. Newman 121

Company Ltd
 A Baigant 122
 Jas Loggins 123
 L M Ruliff 124
 Mr Matheson 125
 Jas Philips 126
 D O Burton 127
 E H Baker 128
 Henry Hadley 129
 James Floyd 130
 Mrs Martin 131
 N K Hillman 132
 H Millson 133
 W L Franklin 134
 Jas Haddon 135
 J M Collins 136
 J H Collins 137
 John Collins 138
 J H Peters 139
 G G Haddon 140
 Lewis Tidwell 141
 H Schumacher 142
 J Munton 143
 W. Bergman 144
 John Bergman 145
 Isaac Parks 146
 K. Finer 147

J. J. Chatham, enrolling officer for
 Dist No 4, of Gentry County do solemnly
 swear that the foregoing contains a
 full & complete list of names of
 the citizens of said Dist who are
 under law subject to military duty
 so far as I have been able to ascertain
 or know or believe
 So help me God
 sworn to & subscribed by J. J. Chatham
 before me this } Enrolling officer
 1st day of Oct 1861 }
 P. M. Morning clock }
 G. G. Giles

Muston Roll

of
 Capt John B. Ashford

Dist No 4

Grimes Co-17th Regt
 Infy

Commissioned
 October 16th 1861

Can see this date

A list of Names of Militia for Beat
No 4 of Queens County

- | | | | |
|----|-----------------------|----|-----------------|
| 1 | Ashford J. B. | 31 | Mc Waters J. |
| 2 | Ashford Tho. C. | 32 | Mc Mullins D. |
| 3 | Allen Wm. | 33 | Mc Lean D. |
| 4 | Beckwith F. M. | 34 | Memick B. |
| 5 | Bridges L. M. | 35 | McCulloch J. H. |
| 6 | Bowen J. H. | 36 | Mayo Wm. |
| 7 | Byrum | 37 | Marks Wm. |
| 8 | Burgis James | 38 | Nolan A. |
| 9 | Badin W. F. | 39 | Nolan Wm. |
| 10 | Barrett R. F. | 40 | Nixon John |
| 11 | Bennett Charles | 41 | Pritchett W. H. |
| 12 | Clay Tho. O. | 42 | Smith D. |
| 13 | Chandler G. W. | 43 | Smith H. |
| 14 | Crawson W. | 44 | Seaton B. M. |
| 15 | Brohson D. | 45 | Shelton L. W. |
| 16 | Collins J. D. | 46 | Sammels R. J. |
| 17 | Caloway A. C. | 47 | Strosser G. |
| 18 | Caloway J. B. | 48 | Treble R. G. |
| 19 | Dollus R. P. | 49 | Thomas G. A. |
| 20 | Dannels J. M. | 50 | Thomas John |
| 21 | Davis E. H. | 51 | Walker Charles |
| 22 | Evans W. A. | 52 | White David |
| 23 | Folly E. A. | 53 | White J. W. |
| 24 | Frien John | 54 | Weaker Thos. A. |
| 25 | Fisher W. D. | 55 | Weaks Charles |
| 26 | Jones John C. G. | 56 | Wright W. J. |
| 27 | Lawrence Ludley | 57 | Barr Editha |
| 28 | Lockhart C. M. | 58 | Gresham T. C. |
| | Lawson D. B. | 59 | Gresham A. W. |
| | Lacy J. H. | | Campbell A. |

APPENDIX V

INCOMPLETE LIST OF GRIMES COUNTY OFFICIALS 1846-1929

Date	County Clerk	County Judge	Source of Data
1846-1848	Albert G. Perry		<i>Zuber to Buffington, June 26, 1903.</i>
1848-1850	Geo. M. Patrick		<i>Texas Almanac of 1857, 94.</i>
1850-1852	Geo. M. Patrick		
1852-1854	Geo. M. Patrick		
1854-1856	Geo. M. Patrick		
1856-1858	Geo. M. Patrick	G. M. Mooring	<i>Ibid.</i>
1858-1860	Geo. M. Patrick	G. M. Mooring	<i>Ibid. of 1858.</i>
1860-1862	Geo. M. Patrick		
1862-1864	Geo. M. Patrick		
1864-1866	Geo. M. Patrick	G. M. Mooring	<i>Ibid. of 1865.</i>
1866-1868	Geo. M. Patrick	W. E. Barry	<i>Ibid. of 1866, 239¹</i>
1868-1870	G. M. Mooring	W. E. Barry	<i>Ibid. of 1868, 195.</i>
1870-1872		W. E. Barry	<i>L. H. Barry to E. L. Blair, July 9, 1928.</i>
1872-1874			
1874-1876			
1876-1878	T. C. Buffington	J. L. Dickson	<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court, C, 36.</i>

¹From July 30, 1867 (date of Governor Throckmorton's removal by Sheridan), to November 7, 1867, county government was in the hands of men appointed by the military Governor, Barker, Potts and Ramsdell, in *A School History of Texas*, 228.

Date	County Clerk	County Judge	Source of Data
1878-1880	T. C. Buffington	A. Buffington ²	<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court, C, 36.</i>
1880-1882	T. C. Buffington	A. Buffington	<i>Ibid., C, 76</i>
1882-1884	Lock McDaniel	P. W. Cawthon	<i>Ibid., C, 219</i>
1884-1886	Geo. D. Neal	P. C. McKee	<i>Ibid., C, 369</i>
1886-1888	L. R. Wren	P. C. McKee	<i>Ibid., D, 22</i>
1888-1890	L. R. Wren	P. C. McKee	<i>Ibid., D, 136</i>
1890-1892	C. L. Kettler	P. C. McKee	<i>Ibid., 246.</i>
1892-1894	J. G. McDonald	P. C. McKee	<i>Ibid., 403.</i>
1894-1896	J. G. McDonald	P. C. McKee	<i>Ibid., E, 128</i>
1896-1898	J. H. Teague	M. S. Womack	<i>Ibid., 285.</i>
1898-1900	J. H. Teague	C. B. Nickols	<i>Ibid., 473 ff.</i>
1900-1902	J. G. McDonald	Jno. T. Prestwood	<i>Ibid., 586.</i>
1902-1904	J. G. McDonald	Jno. T. Prestwood ³	<i>Ibid., E-1, 82.</i>

²A. Buffington seems to have been appointed, July 5, 1881, for the unexpired term of J. L. Dickson. (*Ibid.*, C, 177.)

³The political campaign of 1900 is one of importance in the history of Grimes county for it was in this year that the White Man's Union first submitted a ticket. In the election of 1896 the Populist party combined with the Republicans, which was then composed mostly of negroes, and defeated the Democratic ticket. A similar campaign in 1898 resulted in a controversy. The Democrats contested the election. While the contest was pending, the election returns were taken from the office of the county clerk, C. B. Nickols, and it is thought that they were burned. At any rate they were never found and the Populist-Republican combination claimed the victory. With a few exceptions their candidates held the offices until 1900. In the Spring of 1899 a small group of men met secretly in the office of Judge J. G. McDonald to discuss plans for the organization of a White Man's Union. Five men are known to have been present at this meeting, namely: John Wickey, of Anderson; Will Edwards, of Prairie Plains; Sam Isbell, of Bedias; Jim Ogg, of Plantersville; and J. G. McDonald, of Anderson. It was decided to delay the actual organization until the public attitude could be sounded. A few months after this meeting a white boy was killed by a negro in the Roan's Prairie community and the negro was hung by a mob of white men. About ten days later a white church building in the Erwin community was burned and a negro was suspected. When a group of white men called at this negro's home, he refused to come out of the house, and in the subsequent fight, two white men were slightly wounded. The negro was taken and immediately hanged. The organization of the White Man's Union quickly followed. Membership was open to all white men upon application, but such applications were subject to black-ball. In the actual election, however, any white man could vote the ticket, even

Date	County Clerk	County Judge	Source of Data
1904-1906	T. P. Buffington	R. P. Siddall	<i>Ibid.</i> , 264 ff.
1906-1908	T. P. Buffington	R. P. Siddall	<i>Ibid.</i> , 446.
1908-1910	Hood Boone	R. C. Wood	<i>Ibid.</i> , F, 83-99.
1910-1912	Hood Boone	R. C. Wood	<i>Ibid.</i> , D, 136.
1912-1914	Reid Rikard	A. G. Lyles	<i>Ibid.</i> , 312; H 55
1914-1916	Reid Rikard	A. G. Lyles	<i>Ibid.</i> , H, 248.
1916-1918	T. P. Buffington	Fred C. Greenwood	<i>Ibid.</i> , 440
1918-1920	T. P. Buffington	Fred C. Greenwood	<i>Ibid.</i> , 568
1920-1922	R. M. West	E. W. Hooker	<i>Ibid.</i> , I, 55
1922-1824	R. M. West	E. W. Hooker	<i>Ibid.</i> , 215
1924-1926	R. W. Barry	Goree Simms	<i>J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair</i> July 8, 1928.
1926-1928	R. W. Barry	Goree Simms	<i>Ibid.</i>

though he was not a member of the Union. The candidates on the White Man's Union Ticket for 1900 were as follows: County Judge, J. G. McDonald; County Attorney, Haynes Shannon; County Clerk, J. T. Prestwood; District Clerk, Billie Wilcox; County Sheriff, J. C. Baker; County Tax-collector, Bob H. Oliphant; County Tax-assessor, W. S. Stampley; County Treasurer, L. M. Bragg; Representative, J. M. Ackerman; Senator, Floyd Edwards; Commissioners, J. M. Barron, J. L. Gillespie, R. M. West, and Will Ashe. The Union was successful at the polls without exception, and no White Man's Union candidate has been defeated in Grimes county since that date. The Union made it a rule that no officer could hold office for more than two terms, and it has become almost an unwritten law in Grimes county that a candidate for a second term would have no opposition. Since there were eight voting precincts in the county, and it being the policy of the Union to allow each precinct representation in the county government, the custom of allowing each precinct to draw an office for which they were to submit candidates was established. The offices drawn for were as follows: judge, attorney, clerk, tax-collector, tax-assessor, treasurer, sheriff, and district clerk. Slips for each of these offices were placed in a bucket and members of the executive committee (one from each precinct) drew one slip and for the office thus drawn his precinct, and only his, could nominate candidates. In actual practice, however, precincts often exchange candidates. This allows a precinct to secure an office for which they have a suitable candidate. Candidates for the offices of senator, representative, surveyor, and county school superintendent, were nominated at large. *J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair*, July 10, 1928.

EARLY HISTORY OF GRIMES COUNTY

199

Date	Sheriff	District Clerk	Source of Data
1846-1848			
1848-1850			
1850-1852		H. W. Raglin	F. Brigance, <i>Memoirs of Franklin Bri- gance.</i>
1852-1854		F. Brigance	<i>Ibid.</i>
1854-1856		F. Brigance	<i>Ibid.</i>
1856-1858	John B. Camp	F. Brigance	<i>Will Stevenson to Hannibal Wilson April 9, 1926.</i>
1858-1860	W. J. Gray	F. Brigance	<i>Texas Almanac 1858, 94.</i>
1860-1862			
1862-1864			
1864-1866	C. S. Cone	R. H. Bassett	<i>Ibid. of 1865-1867, 46.</i>
1866-1868	A. J. Stearns	F. Brigance	<i>Ibid. 1865-1866 239.</i>
1868-1870	Jno. B. Swayne	F. Brigance	<i>Ibid.</i>
1870-1872			
1872-1874			
1874-1876			
1876-1878	Jno. B. Swayne	F. Brigance	<i>Ibid. of 1878, 84.</i>
1878-1880	D. A. Wood ⁴		<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court, C, 76-77.</i>
1880-1882	D. A. Wood	F. Brigance	<i>Ibid.,. 148.</i>

⁴John B. Swayne resigned, August 18, 1877, and D. A. Wood was appointed to fill out the unexpired term, August 24, 1877. *Minutes of Commissioners' Court, C, 36.*

Date	Sheriff	District Clerk	Source of Data
1882-1884	G. L. Scott	J. L. Kennard	<i>Ibid.</i> , 219.
1884-1886	G. L. Scott	S. J. Sanders	<i>Ibid.</i> , 369 ff.
1886-1888	G. L. Scott	F. Brigance	<i>Ibid.</i> , D, 22.
1888-1890	G. L. Scott	F. Brigance	<i>Ibid.</i> , 136.
1890-1892	M. M. Cone	W. G. Bennett	<i>Ibid.</i> , 246 ff.
1892-1894	M. M. Cone	W. G. Bennett	<i>Ibid.</i> , 403.
1894-1896	M. P. Yarborough	W. G. Bennett	<i>Ibid.</i> , E, 128.
1896-1898	G. L. Scott	Gilford Smith	<i>Ibid.</i> , 285.
1898-1900	G. L. Scott	Gilford Smith	<i>Ibid.</i> , 473-491.
1900-1902	J. C. Baker	W. L. Wilcox	<i>Ibid.</i> , 586.
1902-1904	J. C. Baker	W. L. Wilcox	<i>Ibid.</i> , E-1, 82.
1904-1906	S. E. Hooker	J. H. Neeley	<i>Ibid.</i> , 264 ff.
1906-1908	S. E. Hooker	J. H. Neeley	<i>Ibid.</i> , 446.
1908-1910	T. H. Lacy	J. F. West	<i>Ibid.</i> , F, 83-99.
1910-1912	T. H. Lacy	R. E. Shine	<i>Ibid.</i> , 244-250.
1912-1914	Jno. Grissett	W. E. Binford	<i>Ibid.</i> , H, 55.
1914-1916	Jno. Grissett ⁵	W. E. Binford	<i>Ibid.</i> , 248.
1916-1918	W. J. Lyles	G. M. Webb	<i>Ibid.</i> , 439 ff.
1918-1920	W. J. Lyles	G. M. Webb	<i>Ibid.</i> , 568.
1920-1922	J. F. Stewart	J. K. Mason	<i>Ibid.</i> , I, 55.
1922-1924	J. F. Stewart	J. K. Mason	<i>Ibid.</i> , 215.
1924-1926	R. M. Hudson	R. A. Hoke	<i>Ibid.</i> , 483.
1926-1928	R. M. Hudson	R. A. Hoke	<i>J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, July 7, 1928.</i>
1928-1930	W. B. Binford	J. F. Stewart	<i>Ibid.</i>

⁵John Grissett died while in office and the Commissioner's Court appointed G. M. Webb to fill out the unexpired term. The appointment was made on July 12, 1915. *Minutes of Commissioners' Court*, H. 323.

Date	Tax Collector	Tax Assessor	Source of Data
1846-1848	F. Brigance		F. Brigance, <i>Memoirs.</i>
1848-1850	F. Brigance		<i>Ibid.</i>
1850-1852		Elisha Floyd	Central Texian, ⁶ August 11, 1855
1852-1854			
1854-1856			
1856-1858	Solomon Greer ⁷	Solomon Greer	Solomon Greer's T a x Assessor's Book.
1858-1860	Wm. Carley	Wm. Carley	<i>Texas Almanac</i> , 1859, 213.
1860-1862			
1862-1864		F. Brigance	F. Brigance, <i>Memoirs.</i>
1864-1866	Wm. Carley		<i>Texas Almanac</i> , 1865, 46.
1866-1868	W. L. Chathan	W. L. Chathan	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1865-1866, 239
1868-1870	W. L. Chathan	W. L. Chathan	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1868, 195.
1870-1876	(No record)		
1876-1878	A. W. Kennard	E. T. Terrell	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1878, 84.
1878-1880	C. C. Camp	W. C. Steele	<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court C</i> , 76-77.
1880-1882	C. C. Camp	W. C. Steele	<i>Ibid.</i> , 148 ff.
1882-1884	C. C. Camp	W. C. Steele	<i>Ibid.</i> , 219.
1884-1886	Geo. W. Dodd	W. C. Steele	<i>Ibid.</i> , 369 ff.

⁶The *Central Texian* was a newspaper published at Anderson, Texas. The Editor, August 11, 1855, was Wm. B. Reynolds. The writer secured a copy of this paper from Miss Neeley Davis, of Grimes county.

⁷The writer was allowed to examine the record books kept by Mr. Solomon Greer. This book has been donated to the Library of the University of Texas, by Mr. W. W. Greer of Carlos, Texas .

Date	Tax Collector	Tax Assessor	Source of Data
1886-1888	A. Garvin	W. C. Steele	<i>Ibid.</i> , D, 22.
1888-1890	A. W. Garvin		<i>Ibid.</i> , 136.
1890-1892	J. H. Kennard	W. O. Smith	<i>Ibid.</i> , 246.
1892-1894	J. H. Kennard	R. C. Wood	<i>Ibid.</i> , 403.
1894-1896	B. W. Pearce, Sr.	D. D. Greer	<i>Ibid.</i> , E, 128.
1896-1898	W. G. Howard	D. D. Greer	<i>Ibid.</i> , 285.
1898-1900	W. G. Howard	D. D. Greer	<i>Ibid.</i> , 473-491.
1900-1902	R. H. Oliphant	W. S. Stampley	<i>Ibid.</i> , 586.
1902-1904	Gary Thomas	W. S. Stampley	<i>Ibid.</i> , E-1, 82.
1904-1906	J. T. Simms	Jno. McKinney	<i>Ibid.</i> , 264-290.
1906-1908	J. T. Simms	T. S. Blake	<i>Ibid.</i> , 446.
1908-1910	Jno. McKinney	J. B. Mooring	<i>Ibid.</i> , F, 83-99.
1910-1912	Jno. McKinney	J. B. Mooring	<i>Ibid.</i> , 244-250.
1912-1914	Will H. Smith	J. A. Neeley	<i>Ibid.</i> , H, 55.
1914-1916	Will H. Smith	J. A. Neeley	<i>Ibid.</i> , 248.
1916-1918	C. H. Crutchfield	M. E. McGee	<i>Ibid.</i> , 440.
1918-1920	C. H. Crutchfield	M. E. McGee	<i>Ibid.</i> , 568
1920-1922	A. W. Lewis	G. G. Keyser	<i>Ibid.</i> , I, 55.
1922-1924	A. W. Lewis	G. G. Keyser	<i>Ibid.</i> , 215.
1924-1926	H. B. Lavender	Irvin P. Bradley	<i>Ibid.</i> , 483.
1926-1928	H. B. Lavender	Irvin P. Bradley	<i>J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, July 8, 1928. Ibid.</i>
1928-1930	Lee McKinney	R. W. Mallett	<i>Ibid.</i>
Date	County Attorney	County Surveyor	Source of Data
1864-1866 ⁸		Rufus Grimes	<i>Texas Almanac of 1865-1867, 46.</i>
1866-1868			
1868-1870	Henry C. Searcy		<i>Ibid. of 1868, 195.</i>
1870-1872			
1872-1874			
1874-1876			

⁸The writer has no data for the period 1846-1864.

Date	County Attorney	County Surveyor	Source of Data
1876-1878		T. G. Ashford	<i>Texas Almanac</i> of 1878, 84.
1878-1880			
1880-1882			
1882-1884	C. L. Kettler		<i>Minutes of</i> <i>Commissioners'</i> <i>Court</i> , C, 219.
1884-1886	C. L. Kettler ⁹		<i>Ibid.</i> , 369 ff.
1886-1888	J. H. Teague		<i>Ibid.</i> , D, 22.
1888-1890	J. M. Wesson		<i>Ibid.</i> , 136.
1890-1892	J. G. McDonald		<i>Ibid.</i> , 246.
1892-1894	E. A. Scott	Rufus Grimes	<i>Ibid.</i> , 403.
1894-1896	E. A. Scott		<i>Ibid.</i> , E, 128.
1896-1898	A. M. Campbell		<i>Ibid.</i> , C, 290.
1898-1900	A. M. Campbell		<i>Ibid.</i> , 973-991
1900-1902	Haynes Shannon		<i>Ibid.</i> , 568.
1902-1904	A. F. Brigance		<i>Ibid.</i> , E-1, 22.
1904-1906	A. F. Brigance	E. F. Edwards	<i>Ibid.</i> , 264 ff.
1906-1908	C. M. Spann		<i>Ibid.</i> , 446
1908-1910	W. E. Neeley		<i>Ibid.</i> , F, 83 ff.
1910-1912	W. E. Neeley	Geo. Siddall	<i>Ibid.</i> , 244 ff.
1912-1914	Pat N. Fahey	Geo. Siddall	<i>Ibid.</i> , H, 55.
1914-1916	Pat N. Fahey	Geo. Siddall	<i>Ibid.</i> , 248.
1916-1918	Hal B. Stoneham		<i>Ibid.</i> , 440.
1918-1920	Hal B. Stoneham		<i>Ibid.</i> , 568.
1920-1922	J. G. Lyles		<i>Ibid.</i> , I, 55.
1922-1924	W. W. Smith		<i>Ibid.</i> , 215.
1924-1926	W. W. Smith	Geo. Siddall	<i>Ibid.</i> , 483.
1926-1928	W. W. Smith	Geo. Siddall	<i>J. G. McDonald</i> <i>to E. L. Blair,</i> <i>July —, —</i> <i>Ibid.</i>
1928-1930	J. G. McDonald	Geo. Siddall	<i>Ibid.</i>

⁹C. L. Kettler resigned, February 4, 1886, and the Commissioners' Court appointed F. Brigance on the same day. *Commissioners' Court Minutes*, C. 440.

Date	County Treasurer	County Superintendent	Source of Data
1878-1880 ¹⁰	Lock McDaniel		<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court</i> , C, 163.
1880-1882	Jno. F. Martin		<i>Ibid.</i> , 148.
1882-1884	Jno. F. Martin		<i>Ibid.</i> , 219.
1884-1886	Jno. F. Martin		<i>Ibid.</i> , 376.
1886-1888	Jno F. Martin		<i>Ibid.</i> , D, 22.
1888-1890	W. W. Kennard		<i>Ibid.</i> , 136.
1890-1892	W. W. Kennard		<i>Ibid.</i> , 246.
1892-1894	W. W. Kennard	W. L. Campbell	<i>Ibid.</i> , D, 403.
1894-1896	Jno. B. Terrell		<i>Ibid.</i> , E, 128.
1896-1898	Jno. B. Terrell ¹¹		<i>Ibid.</i> , 285 ff.
1898-1900	R. G. Deadrick ¹²		<i>Ibid.</i> , 473-491.
1900-1902	L. M. Bragg		<i>Ibid.</i> , 586.
1902-1904	L. M. Bragg		<i>Ibid.</i> , E-1, 84.
1904-1906	L. T. Calloway		<i>Ibid.</i> , 264-290.
1906-1908	J. F. West		<i>Ibid.</i> , 446.
1908-1910	G. C. Hall	J. Thomas Davis ¹³	<i>Ibid.</i> , F, 83-99.
1910-1912	G. C. Hall	W. W. Barron	<i>Ibid.</i> , 244.
1912 ¹ -1914	M. L. Floyd	W. W. Barron ¹⁴	<i>Ibid.</i> , 312; H 55
1914-1916	M. L. Floyd	J. C. Crutchfield	<i>Ibid.</i> , H, 248.
1916-1918	R. H. Oliphant	M. A. McDonald	<i>Ibid.</i> , H, 440.
1918-1920	R. H. Oliphant	Lizzie Faye Grissett	<i>Ibid.</i> , 568.

¹⁰The writer has no data for period 1846-1878.

¹¹John B. Terrell died while in office and the unexpired term was filled by R. G. Deadrick, appointed June 13, 1898. *Minutes of Commissioners' Court*, E, 442.

¹²R. G. Deadrick died while in office and his term was completed by W. T. Neblett, appointed August 27, 1900. The Commissioners' Court passed resolutions of respect to Deadrick which are of record in *Minutes of Commissioners' Court*, E, 580.

¹³J. Thos. Davis was appointed, July 30, 1907, and resigned on September 5, 1910, W. S. Barron having been appointed to take his place, August 19, 1910. *Minutes of Commissioners' Court*, F, 83-99.

¹⁴W. S. Barron resigned on August 1, 1914, and J. C. Crutchfield was appointed July 14, 1914. *Ibid.*, H, 214.

Date	County Treasurer	County Superintendent	Source of Data
1920-1922		Geo. P. Barron	<i>Ibid.</i> , I, 55.
1922-1924	Mark Mallett	Geo. P. Barron	<i>Ibid.</i> , 215.
1924-1926	Roland Hill	Emory Barrett	<i>Ibid.</i> , 483.
1926-1928	Roland Hill	Emory Barrett	<i>J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, July 9, 1928.</i>
1928-1930	Callahan	Elizabeth Siddall	<i>Ibid.</i>

MEN WHO HAVE REPRESENTED GRIMES COUNTY IN THE
HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES, 1846-1931

Date	Legis- lature	Legis- lative Dist.	Representatives	Source of Data
1846-1847	1			
1847-1849	2			
1849-1851	3		David C. Dickson	<i>House Journal</i>
1851-1853	4	30	David C. Dickson	<i>Ibid.</i>
1853-1855	5	39	Thos. H. M. Rogers	<i>Ibid.</i>
1855-1857	6	39	David C. Dickson	<i>Ibid.</i>
1857-1859	7	39	Thos. H. M. Rogers	<i>Ibid.</i>
1859-1861	8	39	David C. Dickson	<i>Ibid.</i>
1861-1863	9	37	J. G. McDonald	<i>Ibid.</i> , and <i>Elec- tion Register</i>
		37	P. J. Palmer	<i>Ibid.</i>
1863-1865	10	37	J. G. McDonald	<i>Election Register and County Of- ficers</i>
		37	R. I. Inge	<i>Ibid.</i>
1866-1867	11	37	I. Worsham	<i>Ibid.</i>
1870-1871 ¹⁶	12	15	J. T. Butler	<i>Ibid.</i>

¹⁵Since the number of the Legislature is given in the second column, it is not necessary to give the number of the House Journal, when cited here.

¹⁶During the period, 1867-1870, Texas was under military government pending reconstruction along the lines of the Congressional plan.

Date	Legis- lature	Legis- lative Dist.	Representatives	Source of Data
1870-1871		15	Carn C. Duval	<i>Election Register of State and County Officers</i>
		15	R. Williams, (colored)	
		13	F. C. Franks	<i>Ibid.</i>
1871-1873	13	15	J. H. Washington, (colored) ¹⁷	<i>Ibid.</i>
	13	15	R. Williams, (colored)	<i>Ibid.</i>
	13	15	J. S. Mills	<i>Ibid.</i>
1873-1876	14	15	Thomas Beck, (colored)	<i>Ibid.</i>
1876-1879	15	30	Cardis Louis	<i>Ibid.</i>
	15	29	W. V. Henderson	<i>Ibid.</i>
1879-1881	16	29	Thos. Beck, (colored)	<i>Ibid.</i>
	16	30	R. J. Evans, (colored)	<i>Ibid.</i>
1881-1883	17	30	Thos. Beck, (colored)	<i>Ibid.</i>
	17	29	R. J. Evans, (colored)	<i>Ibid.</i>
1883-1885	18	52	John L. McAlpine	<i>Ibid.</i>
1885-1887	19	52	T. B. Greenwood	<i>Ibid.</i>
1887-1889	20	52	H. A. D. Bassett	<i>Ibid.</i>
1889-1891	21	52	W. L. Campbell	<i>Ibid.</i>
1891-1893	22	52	John D. Keith	<i>Ibid.</i>
1893-1895	23	54	W. E. Barry	<i>Ibid.</i>
	23	47	N. E. Dever	<i>Ibid.</i>
1895-1897	24	54	A. F. Brigance	<i>Election Register of State and County Officers</i>

¹⁷The men listed as "colored" were so listed in a list of *Negro Legislators in Texas*, furnished the writer by Miss Harriet Smither, Archivist of the Texas State Library.

Date	Legis- lature	Legis- lative Dist.	Representatives	Source of Data
1897-1899	25	54	J. M. Bennett	<i>Election of Reg- ister of State and County Officers.</i>
1899-1901	26	54	J. M. Bennett	<i>Ibid.</i>
1901-1903	27	54	John M. Ackerman	<i>Ibid.</i>
1903-1905	28	44	J. McDonald Meachum	<i>Ibid.</i>
1905-1907	29	44	G. J. Winter	<i>Ibid.</i>
1907-1909	30	44	J. G. McDonald	<i>Ibid.</i>
1909-1911	31	44	J. G. McDonald	<i>Ibid.</i>
1911-1913	32	44	T. P. Buffington	<i>Ibid.</i>
1913-1915	33	21	W. E. Neeley	<i>Ibid.</i>
1915-1917	34	21	W. E. Neeley	<i>Ibid.</i>
1917-1919	35	21	W. E. Neeley	<i>Legislative Manual, 1917</i>
	35	22	Dr. Oscar Davis	<i>Ibid.</i>
1919-1921	36	21	W. M. Williams	<i>Election Register</i>
	36	22	J. G. McDonald	<i>Ibid.</i>
1921-1923	37	21	W. M. Williams	<i>Legislative Manual, 1917</i>
	37	22	Lee J. Rountree	<i>Ibid.</i>
1923-1925	38	26	Lee J. Rountree	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1923
	38	27	W. H. Diggers	<i>Ibid.</i>
1925-1927	39	26	W. S. Barron	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1925
	38	27	Robert A. Powell	<i>Ibid.</i>
1927-1929	40	26	W. S. Barron	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1927
	40	27	R. A. Powell	<i>Ibid.</i>
1929-1931	41	26	W. S. Barron	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1929
	41	27	John M. Ackerman	<i>Ibid.</i>

MEN WHO HAVE REPRESENTED GRIMES COUNTY IN THE
STATE SENATE, 1846-1931

Date	Legis- lature	Sena- torial Dist.	Name of Senator	Source of Data
1846-1847	1		Jesse Grimes	<i>Senate Journal</i>
1847-1847	2		Jesse Grimes	<i>Ibid.</i>
1849-1851	3	13	Jesse Grimes	<i>Ibid.</i>
1851-1853	4	13	Jesse Grimes	<i>Ibid.</i>
1853-1855	5			
1855-1857	6	19	Jesse Grimes	<i>Ibid.</i>
1857-1859	7	19	Jesse Grimes	<i>Ibid.</i>
1859-1861	8	19	Jesse Grimes	<i>Ibid.</i>
1861-1863	9	17	A. M. Branch	<i>Election Register</i>
1863-1865	10	17	David C. Dickson	<i>Ibid.</i>
1866-1867	11	17	Benton Randolph	<i>Ibid.</i>
1870-1871	12	17	W. A. Saylor	<i>Ibid.</i>
1871-1873	13	15	E. T. Randle	<i>Ibid.</i>
1873-1876	14	15	Ed Randle	<i>Ibid.</i>
1876-1879	15	16	Tillman Smith	<i>Ibid.</i>
1879-1881	16	16	J. R. Burnett	<i>Ibid.</i>
1881-1883	17		J. T. Buchanan	<i>Ibid.</i>
	17		J. G. McDonald	<i>Ibid.</i>
1883-1885	18	8	M. G. Randolph	<i>Ibid.</i>
1885-1887	19	8	M. G. Randolph	<i>Ibid.</i>
1887-1889	20	8	Wm. W. Davis	<i>Ibid.</i>
1889-1891	21	8	Wm. W. Davis	<i>Ibid.</i>
1891-1893	22	8	W. B. Page	<i>Election Register</i>
1893-1895	23	15	W. P. McComb	<i>Ibid.</i>
1895-1897	24	15	W. P. McComb	<i>Ibid.</i>
1897-1899	25	15	Geo. D. Neal	<i>Ibid.</i>
1899-1901	26	15	Geo. D. Neal	<i>Ibid.</i>
1901-1903	27	15	Geo. D. Neal	<i>Ibid.</i>
1903-1905	28	15	A. W. Morris	<i>Ibid.</i>
1905-1907	29	15	J. McDonald Meachum	<i>Ibid.</i>
1907-1909	30	15	J. McDonald Meachum	<i>Ibid.</i>
1909-1911	31	15	J. McDonald Meachum	<i>Ibid.</i>

Date	Legis- lature	Sena- torial Dist.	Name of Senator	Source of Data
1911-1913	32	15	J. McDonald Meachum	<i>Ibid.</i>
1913-1915	33	15	C. W. Nugent	<i>Ibid.</i>
1915-1917	34	15	C. W. Nugent	<i>Ibid.</i>
1917-1919	35	15	W. L. Dean	<i>Legislative Manual, 1917</i>
1919-1921	36	15	W. L. Dean	<i>Election Register</i>
1921-1923	37	15	H. L. Lewis	<i>Legislative Manual, 1917</i>
1923-1925	38	15	H. L. Lewis	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1923
1925-1927	39	5	H. L. Lewis	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1925
1927-1929	40	5	H. L. Lewis	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1927
1929-1931	41	5	Nat Patton	<i>Ibid.</i> , 1929

COUNTY COMMISSIONERS GRIMES COUNTY, 1868-1931

Date	County Commissioners	Source of Data
1868-1870 ¹⁸	J. Buchannon Wilson Taylor C. S. Talleferro A. B. Easley	<i>Texas Almanac of 1868, 195</i>
1876-1878	J. Buchannon W. G. Howard P. B. Cabeen Joe Andrews	<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court, C, 36.</i>
1878-1880	W. M. Spaulding ¹⁹ Joseph Andrews Adrian Garvin Lewis Owen	<i>Ibid.</i> , 76-77.
1880-1882	W. C. Hearne ²⁰	<i>Ibid.</i> , 148.

¹⁸The writer found no records that gave the members of the Commissioners' Court, 1846-1868. The records for 1870-1871 are also lacking.

¹⁹Joseph Andrews resigned on December 9, 1878 (*Ibid.*, C, 77) and Elisha Floyd took the place of Lewis Owen (*Ibid.*, 99). W. I. Terrell took the place of Wm. Spaulding (*Ibid.*, 78).

²⁰Commissioners in 1881 were as follows: C. L. Miller, W. H. Stephenson, Lewis G. Blackburn, and Moses Upchurch (*Ibid.*, 194).

Date	County Commissioners	Source of Data
1882-1884	Moses Upchurch C. L. Miller W. H. Stephenson T. J. Haynie B. B. Lowery Robt. Woodward	<i>Ibid.</i> , 222.
1884-1886	A. C. Calloway J. W. Lawless R. B. Templeman W. C. Hendrick S. V. Smith	<i>Ibid.</i> , 369-71.
1886-1888	H. Mallett Henry Washington T. G. Ashford	<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court</i> , D, 22.
1888-1890	Fred Behn J. D. Wilson Henry Washington H. B. Hughey Fred Behn	<i>Ibid.</i> , 136.
1890-1892	J. D. Nelson G. W. Brown A. C. Calloway Fred Behn	<i>Ibid.</i> , 246.
1892-1894	J. N. Mize T. J. Tucker H. B. Hughey F. H. Behn	<i>Ibid.</i> , 403.
1894-1896	J. T. Mize T. J. Tucker W. A. Sapp E. H. Terrell	<i>Ibid.</i> , E, 128.
1896-1898	Gains Colson J. W. Mayfield B. E. Sapp E. H. Terrell	<i>Ibid.</i> , 285.
1898-1900	Gains Colson ²¹	<i>Ibid.</i> , 473-491.

²¹Behn resigned on February 12, 1900 and his place was taken by John F. Thomas. (*Ibid.*, 558.)

Date	County Commissioners	Source of Data
1900-1902	G. L. Gillispie M. F. Reeder F. H. Behn J. M. Barron J. L. Gillespie Channey Cabean W. S. Ashe	<i>Ibid.</i> , 586.
1902-1904	S. A. Isbell ²² H. L. Green R. M. West W. S. Ashe	<i>Ibid.</i> , E-1, 82.
1904-1906	S. A. Isbell W. F. Stephenson W. T. Shines J. T. Barry	<i>Ibid.</i> , 164 ff.
1906-1908	G. W. Sollock ²³ W. F. Stephenson M. F. Reeder J. T. Barry	<i>Ibid.</i> , 446.
1908-1910	J. M. Peters R. B. Wood W. H. McGee Jno. M. Ackerman	<i>Ibid.</i> , F, 83-99.
1910-1912	H. R. Forrester R. B. Wood W. H. McGee J. M. Ackerman	<i>Ibid.</i> , 244-250.
1912-1914	A. E. Tuck S. C. Cartman T. W. Harris C. M. Mobley	<i>Ibid.</i> , H, 55.
1914-1916	A. E. Tuck S. C. Cartman	<i>Ibid.</i> , 248.

²²W. S. Ashe resigned on May 12, 1904 and his place was taken by J. T. Barry.

²³G. W. Sollock resigned and his place was taken by J. M. Peters (October 7, 1907).

Date	County Commissioners	Source of Data
1916-1918	T. W. Harris C. M. Mobley J. N. Mize W. F. Stephenson G. C. Stoneham	<i>Commisisoners' Court, H, 439, ff.</i>
1918-1920	J. M. Ackerman J. N. Mize W. F. Stephenson N. W. Lyles	<i>Ibid., 568.</i>
1920-1922	J. M. Ackerman R. P. Harrison ²⁴ O. A. Hamilton R. T. West	<i>Ibid., I, 55.</i>
1922-1924	E. H. Terrell R. P. Harrison O. A. Hamilton R. T. West	<i>Ibid., 215.</i>
1924-1926	J. T. Barry D. L. Guerrant Ed. Foster A. D. McAlpine	<i>Ibid., 483.</i>
1926-1928	J. T. Barry D. L. Guerrant Ed. Foster A. D. McAlpine	<i>J. G. McDonald to E. L. Blair, July 9, 1928.</i>
1928-1930	J. T. Barry Robert Hall Will Stephenson Ed Harris J. R. Campbell	<i>Ibid.</i>

²⁴E. H. Terrell resigned on January 1, 1921, and J. T. Barry was appointed to fill the vacancy. *Ibid., I, 64.*

COUNTY SCHOOL BOARD MEMBERS, GRIMES COUNTY, 1910-1931

Date	School Trustees	Source of Data
1910-1912	W. S. Stampley J. C. McDonald J. L. Dreher N. W. Lyles Martin Klein ²⁵	<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court</i> , F,312.
1912-1914	J. L. Dreher Martin Klein N. W. Lyles M. B. Burns ²⁷	<i>Minutes of County School Board</i> . ²⁶
1914-1916	J. L. Dreher Martin Klein G. C. Stoneham W. F. Barnett W. H. Binford	<i>Ibid.</i>
1916-1918	W. H. Binford Anton Gabriel W. F. Barnett J. Thos. Davis John A. McKay	<i>Ibid.</i>
1918-1920	H. R. Jones J. G. McAlpine W. F. Baker L. G. Andrews	<i>Minutes of Commissioners' Court</i> , H, 590.
1920-1922	S. E. Hooker A. D. McAlpine L. G. Andrews J. M. Ackerman Mrs. H. R. Jones	<i>Ibid.</i> , I, 169.

²⁵Prior to 1910 the administration of school affairs was under the County Commissioners.

²⁶The *Minutes of the County School Board* are in volumes arranged chronologically, and the pages are unnumbered. The records, such as they are, are in the office of the County School Superintendent, at Anderson, Texas. The above information was furnished the writer by Miss Elizabeth Siddall, County Superintendent of Grimes county, 1929-1931.

²⁷The fifth member of the board was not named.

Date	School Trustees	Source of Data
1922-1924	L. G. Andrews A. D. McAlpine S. E. Hooker Dudley Brown Mrs. H. R. Jones	<i>L. G. Andrews to E. L. Blair, July 11, 1929, also Minutes of County School Board.</i>
1924-1926	L. G. Andrews Dudley Brown S. E. Hooker A. D. McAlpine H. H. Taylor	<i>Minutes of County School Board.</i>
1926-1928	L. G. Andrews Dudley Brown S. E. Hooker N. W. Lyles H. H. Taylor	<i>Minutes of County School Board.</i>
1928-1930	L. G. Andrews Dr. G. C. Harris Dudley Brown H. H. Taylor S. E. Hooker	<i>L. G. Andrews to E. L. Blair, July 11, 1929.</i>

APPENDIX VI

TEXAS VETERANS FROM GRIMES COUNTY VICINITY

The following list includes those persons whom the writer found listed as members of the Texas Veteran Association. The dates given under the column "date belonging" is the date of the *Proceedings of the Texas Veteran Association* in which that particular name was found. The other data given was taken from the same source.

Name	Date Belong- ing	Date of Migration to Texas	Place of Residence
Bradley, David	1873	1835	Bryan, Texas
Bowman, John J.	1873	1821	Cherokee county
Bowman, James H.	1873	1825	Cherokee county
Cook, Frank J.	1873	1836	Hempstead, Texas
Crawford, Robert	1873		Bryan, Texas
Campbell, Mrs. C. K. D.	1893		Burton, Texas
Conner, W. M.	1893		Houston county
Davis, N. H.	1893		Montgomery county
Fuqua, H. H.	1893		
Fowler, J. W.	1893		Montgomery county
Fuqua, J. H.	1898		Anderson, Texas
Gay, G. D.	1893		Montgomery county
Gentry, N. G.	1893		Montgomery county
Grimes, Rufus	1898		Navasota, Texas
Kennard, Wm. E.	1892		Johnson county
Kennard, M. L.	1893		
McGahay, Samuel S.	1873	1829	Bryan, Texas
Morrell, Z. N.	1873	1835	Brenham, Texas
Morrison, Gwynn	1873		Grimes county
Patrick, Geo. M.	1873	1829	Anderson, Texas
Stewart, C. B.	1873	1830	Montgomery county
Scott, John N.	1893		Montgomery county
Shannon, Matt	1893		Montgomery county
Shannon, M. W.	1893		Dobbin, Texas
Townsend, William	1873		
Wade, John M.	1873	1835	Montgomery county

Name	Date Belong- ing	Date of Migration to Texas	Place of Residence
Waller, Edmund	1873		
Walker, William ¹	1873		
Wade, John M.	1873		Montgomery county
Whitesides, Tilford	1873		Waller county
Whitinder, J. T.	1892		Hempstead, Texas
Whitesides, Mrs. J. T.	1892		Hempstead, Texas
Wallace, W. A.	1893		Big Foot, Frio county
Wood, T. B.	1893		Waller county
Wesson, Rev. J. M.	1898		
Zuber, W. P.	1892		Grimes county

¹Some such names as that of William Walker are included merely because there is a possibility that they may have some connection with the people in Grimes county by that name.

APPENDIX VII

CORRESPONDENCE SHOWING ORIGIN AND DEVELOPMENT OF THE
IDEA OF VOLUNTARY ABSTINENCE FROM THE USE OF WHEAT
AND WHEAT PRODUCTS BY AMERICAN CITIZENS, 1918

The wheatless movement, as such applied to private American citizens, seems to have had its birth in Grimes county. Such constitutes a unique contribution and is of such importance, that the writer has taken considerable interest in gathering together official data. The correspondence given below is self-explanatory, and taken as a whole, gives the history of the movement in a comprehensive manner. The writer is indebted to the Honorable Daniel E. Garrett, Washington, D. C., for his assistance in securing this correspondence. The writer is also very thankful to Mr. E. W. Libby, Chief Clerk, Department of Commerce, Washington, who, at considerable trouble, collected and had copied, the various telegrams and press notices here published.

J. T. SWANSON, President

E. D. BLACKSHEAR, Vice President

G. S. WILKERSON, Secy

SWANSON GROCERY COMPANY

(INCORPORATED)

WHOLESALE GROCERIES

NAVASOTA, TEXAS

August 6, 1929

Mr. E. L. Blair
Austin, Texas

Dear Mr. Blair:

Referring to the part which Grimes County played in putting Texas on a wheatless basis during the World War, the following was what occurred.

At that time I was making weekly trips through considerable of the county, representing my firm. At the same time, I was holding a commission from Mr. Peden's office as Deputy Food Administrator for this district. However, all of my work was, you might say, under Mr. Hewitt, as Mr. Hewitt was appointed Deputy Food Administrator for this district and as I understood my commission, I was to be his assistant.

On leaving here Monday morning I reached Anderson, and the retailers there told me that they had a small amount of flour on hand and would gladly divide same with any merchant in the county. When I arrived at Bedias, I was told practically the same thing by the merchants there. When I reached Iola Mr. E. E. Yeager had gone from home, but left word with his clerk for me, to this effect; that he had some flour in transit, and that he would gladly divide this with other merchants in Grimes County and agree not to buy any more flour until a new crop was harvested; or, he would gladly turn this flour over to the government to be disposed of as they thought best. Upon arrival at Navasota, I immediately got in touch with Mr. Hewitt and told him what had happened, also saying to Mr. Hewitt that I believed both Anderson and Bedias would also willingly and gladly turn their flour over to the government. I immediately got in touch with both places by phone, and asked them if they were willing voluntarily to turn this flour over to the government, which they very generously agreed to do. I then asked Mr. Hewitt to take the matter up with Mr. Peden's office, telling him just what had been done.

Mr. Peden in turn took the matter up with Mr. Hoover's office. The flour was accepted with instructions to hold until they could obtain sacks which were necessary for export purposes. In less than a week, through Mr. Peden's

J. T. SWANSON, President

E. D. BLACKSHEAR, Vice President

C. S. WILKERSON, Sec'y. Treas.

SWANSON GROCERY COMPANY
(INCORPORATED)
WHOLESALE GROCERIES

NAVASOTA, TEXAS

E L B # 2

efforts and through the efforts of the food administrators in the State of Texas, the whole state was on a wheatless basis.

After holding the flour for a week or two, waiting for the sacks, we were advised that the sacks could not be obtained readily, and that the amount of flour in question was small, and expressing to us their appreciation of our efforts, we were informed to go ahead and let this flour be used under the regulation at that time.

If there is anything further that I can explain in this matter, I will be truly glad to do so.

Yours very truly,

J. T. SWANSON

JTS/DC

ESTABLISHED 1880

SPORTING GOODS
HOUSEHOLD GOODS
GENERAL HARDWARE
TOOLS AND CUTLERY
BUILDERS HARDWARE
PIPE AND FITTINGS
ROOFING MATERIALS
AUTOMOTIVE ACCESSORIES

PEDEN IRON & STEEL CO.

HOUSTON AND SAN ANTONIO
WHOLESALE HARDWARE & SUPPLIES

E. A. PEDEN, PRESIDENT
D. D. PEDEN, VICE PRES. & TREAS.
JNO. A. HARVIN, VICE PRES.
S. E. TAYLOR, VICE PRES.



JNO. W. WATTS, VICE PRES.
H. M. STONE, VICE PRES.
E. D. PEDEN, SEC. & ASST. TO PRES.
G. F. WATTS JR., GENERAL MANAGER

INCORPORATED 1911

MACHINE TOOLS
HEAVY HARDWARE
MARINE SUPPLIES
REINFORCING STEEL
OIL WELL SUPPLIES
INDUSTRIAL SUPPLIES
CONTRACTORS SUPPLIES
NAILS AND MORE HARDWARE

HOUSTON, TEXAS July 8, 1929

Mr. E. I. Blair,
Box 788,
Navasota, Texas.

Dear Mr. Blair:-

In response to your interesting letter of July 4th I am sorry to advise that all official records of the Federal Food Administration of Texas were returned to Washington, D.C. in February 1919 under instructions from National Headquarters. For that reason it will be necessary for you to communicate with Washington, if you wish exact copies of these records.

The following statement is based upon memory and after consultation with Mr. H. Wirt Steele, who was my original Manager here during the War; therefore, before incorporating same in any permanent history, it would be wise to verify same by the official documents and records at Washington.

According to my best knowledge the Federal Food Administrator for Texas received a telegram on or about April 15th 1918, from Mr. L. M. Hewitt, District Food Administrator, located at Navasota, Texas, to the effect that the citizens of Grimes County had held a mass meeting and had voluntarily agreed by resolution to abstain from all use of wheat and wheat products for a period of forty-five days, or until the new harvest. This action was taken at perhaps the most critical period of the war, when the Germans were making their great drive toward the English Channel.

A congratulatory telegram was dispatched to Mr. Hewitt, and telegrams explaining the action of the citizens of Grimes County were dispatched to the other fifteen District Food Administrators in Texas, with the request that they arrange to call similar mass meetings throughout their respective districts for the purpose of ascertaining whether their citizenship would be willing to take similar action.

The replies to the above messages were prompt and unanimously in the affirmative.

A few days later another communication was received from Mr. Hewitt stating that his committee in Navasota had collected one or two car loads of wheat flour voluntarily contributed by the business interests of his district, and requesting instructions as to its disposition.

ALL QUOTATIONS MADE SUBJECT TO CONDITIONS PRINTED ON THE REVERSE SIDE OF THIS SHEET.

Page 2.

E.L.B.

Mr. Hewitt was advised to ship the flour to the United States Food Administration Grain Corporation, at Galveston. There this flour was resacked in jute bags and forwarded to England.

A report of the above facts was forwarded to the United States Food Administration at Washington where it was incorporated in a dispatch through the State Department to the General commanding the American Expeditionary Force in France, and was published in the "Stars and Stripes," the newspaper of the A.E.F. on the day that American troops first went into action as American troops.

A personal acknowledgment from General John J. Pershing was subsequently received through Washington and transmitted to me on April 28th, 1918, and by me passed on to the people of Grimes County.

The voluntary contributions of wheat products made by the people of the entire state of Texas, pursuant to the above resolutions, were all sent through the same channel as the one above described, referring to Grimes County flour, and made a sizable cargo, which contributed much to the subsistence and also to the morale of the American troops and the troops of the Allies.

The wheatless program in Texas continued until about June 15th, when flour from the new wheat crop began to reach the market.

Action similar to that of the people of Texas was subsequently taken by the citizens of Arkansas and numerous other states.

I believe this action contributed mightily to the total shipment of the equivalent of some 70,000 bushels of wheat transported to Europe after January 1, 1918, on which date Mr. Hoover, the United States Food Administrator, had cabled Lord Rhonda, British Food Controller, to the effect that the last available pound of surplus American wheat was that day being shipped to England and that any subsequent shipment must necessarily be made from the voluntary savings of the American people.

Yours truly,



RAP:JJS-#11

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

FOR MORNING PAPERS

Washington, D. C.

OF SUNDAY MARCH 24, 1918.
for RELEASE

MARCH 23, 1918.

The United States Food Administration today issued the following:-

If we are to furnish the Allies with the necessary proportion of wheat to maintain their war bread from now until the next harvest, and this is a military necessity, we must reduce our monthly consumption to 21,000,000 bushels a month as against our normal consumption of about 42,000,000 bushels, or 50 per cent of our normal consumption. Reserving a margin for distribution to the Army and for special cases, leaves for general consumption approximately $1\frac{1}{2}$ pounds of wheat products weekly per person. Many of our consumers are dependent upon bakers' bread. Such bread must be durable and therefore requires a larger proportion of wheat products than cereal breads baked in the household. Our Army and Navy require a full allowance. The well-to-do in our population can make greater sacrifices in the consumption of wheat products than can the poor. In addition, our population in the agricultural districts, where the other cereals are abundant, are more skilled in the preparation of breads from these other cereals than the crowded city and industrial populations.

With improved transportation conditions we now have available a surplus of potatoes. We also have in the spring months a surplus of milk, and we have ample corn and oats for human consumption. The drain on rye and barley as substitutes has already greatly exhausted the supply of these grains.

To effect the needed saving of wheat we are wholly dependent upon the voluntary assistance of the American people and we ask that the following rules shall be observed:-

1. Householders to use not to exceed a total of $1\frac{1}{2}$ pounds per week of wheat products per person. This means not more than 1-3/4 pounds of Victory bread containing the required percentage of substitutes and one-half pound of cooking

3-730

flour macaroni, crackers, pastry, pies, cakes, wheat breakfast cereals, all combined.

2. Public eating places and clubs to observe two wheatless days per week, Monday and Wednesday, as at present. In addition thereto, not to serve to any one guest at any one meal, an aggregate of breadstuffs, macaroni, crackers, pastry, pies, cakes, wheat breakfast cereals, containing a total of more than 2 ounces of wheat flour. No wheat products to be served unless specially ordered. Public eating establishments not to buy more than 6 pounds of wheat products for each ninety meals served, thus conforming with the limitations requested of the householders.

3. Retailers to sell not more than one-eighth of a barrel of flour to any town customer at any one time and not more than one-quarter of a barrel to any country customer at any one time, and in no case to sell wheat products without the sale of an equal weight of other cereals.

4. We ask the bakers and grocers to reduce the volume of Victory bread sold, by delivery of the three-quarter pound loaf where one pound was sold before, and corresponding proportions in other weights. We also ask bakers not to increase the amount of their wheat flour purchases beyond 70 per cent of the average monthly amount purchased in the four months prior to March 1st.

5. Manufacturers using wheat products for non-food purposes should cease such use entirely.

6. There is no limit upon the use of other cereals, flours, and meals, corn, barley, buckwheat, potato flour, et cetera.

Many thousand families throughout the land are now using no wheat products whatever, except a very small amount for cooking purposes, and are doing so in perfect health and satisfaction. There is no reason why all of the American people who are able to cook in their own households cannot subsist perfectly well with the use of less wheat products than one and one-half pounds a week, and we

COPY.

TELEGRAM

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

POSTAL

Houston, Tex. Mar. 28, 1918

Food Adm. Zabriskie

Washington.

Citizens in Grimes County have decided to use no wheat flour
and have a car on hand also others rolling and tendered same
to government at cost price is there any way Government can
use this and how would same be financed

Peden.

C O P Y

TELEGRAM

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

POSTAL

Houston, Texas, March 29, 1918.

Food Adm.,

ZABRISKIE

Washington.

Refer exchange telegrams reference flour Grimes County
Seventy five barrels at Anderson Texas price eleven dollars
and eight cents forty three barrels Bedias Texas eleven
twenty seventy five Barrels Iola Texas ten ninety packed in
forty eight and twenty four pound sacks will cost about twenty
nine cents freight to Galveston STOP Please telegraph name of
consignee and how this deal will be financed STOP Many sections
of state are taking same action as citizens of Grimes County and
if the Administration has any machinery for accepting these
comparatively small quantities flour there will evidently be
considerable quantity offered to Government. Please telegraph
immediately.

peden.

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

FOR MORNING

Washington, D. C.
NO 786

March 28, 1918.

~~for~~ RELEASE MARCH 29.

Wheatless meals and days are now optional in private homes, but will be rigidly enforced in all public eating places, the Food Administration announced today. Private homes have been requested as a military measure to reduce wheat consumption to 1½ pounds per person per week.

The full light of publicity will be turned upon establishments violating this urgent request of the Food Administration. Federal Food Administrators in all states were given telegraphic orders today to enforce the program by rigid inspection and investigation. Where violations are reported, the Administrators are instructed to hold hearings which must be open to the public and to the press.

Virtually this means that no violator, no matter what the extenuating circumstances, will be shielded by having his name withheld from the newspapers. Where violations are proved, the Administrators are urged to follow immediately with punitive measures, the nature of which will be determined in consultation with authorities in Washington.

While private homes will not be required to observe wheatless meals and days, they will be required to cut wheat consumption to about one-half of normal. If this can be done without entirely giving up wheat at any meal, the Food Administration will consider that its program is being followed strictly to the letter. It is urging, however, that those, whose circumstances and requirements permit, effect an even greater reduction. It believes that the imperative necessity for this measure will be well understood and that its request will receive ready response from the intelligent classes

-----oO-----

---[AE]---

2-780

especially ask the well-to-do households in the country to follow this additional programme in order that we may provide the necessary marginal supplies for those parts of the community less able to adapt themselves to so large a proportion of substitutes.

In order that we shall be able to make the wheat exports that are absolutely demanded of us to maintain the civil population and soldiers of the Allies and our own Army, we propose to supplement the voluntary co-operation of the public by a further limitation of distribution and we shall place at once restrictions on distribution which will be adjusted from time to time to secure as nearly equitable distribution as possible. With the arrival of harvest we should be able to relax such restrictions; until then we ask for the necessary patience, sacrifice and co-operation of the distributing trades.

-----lbg-----

C O P Y

OUT-GOING TELEGRAM

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

WASHINGTON

March 29, 1918.

PEDEN
FOOD ADMINISTRATION
HOUSTON TEXAS

WE COMPLIMENT THE CITIZENS OF GRIMES COUNTY UPON
THEIR PATRIOTISM AND EVERY POUND OF WHEAT FLOUR THEY
CONSERVE WILL GO TO OUR ASSOCIATES IN THE WAR PLEASE ADVISE
WHERE THIS FLOUR IS THE COST AND HAVE IT DIVERTED TO
GALVESTON

HOOVER

C O P Y.

OUT-GOING TELEGRAM

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

WASHINGTON

PEDEN
FOOD ADMINISTRATOR
HOUSTON TEXAS

REPLYING TELEGRAM SUGGEST GATHERING UP OFFERINGS
OF WHEAT FLOUR BY PATRIOTIC CITIZENS OF TEXAS MAKING SAME UP
INTO CARLOADS AND SHIPPING TO GALVESTON WHERE ALLIED SHIPS
WILL TAKE IT ABOARD PAYMENT WILL BE MADE BY WHEAT EXPORT
COMPANY AGAINST BILLS OF LADING OR IF YOU THINK IT SHOULD BE
TAKEN OVER BY FOOD ADMINISTRATION WILL ARRANGE TO DO THAT

FOOD ADMINISTRATION

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

Washington, D. C.

for RELEASE FOR EVENING NO. 787

PAPERS OF DATE.

March 29, 1918.

---000---

More than 400 hotel men are in Washington today to confer with the United States Food Administration in efforts to map out a program by which they can effect still further reduction in American consumption of wheat. The meeting is said to be the most important and representative ever held by American hotel managers and proprietors. The largest and best known hotels from coast to coast and from Canada to Mexico are represented. Owing to hotel congestion in Washington, the entire party will leave this afternoon for New York, where the meeting will be continued tomorrow.

Judging from the attitude of hotel men who were in informal conferences at the Food Administration this morning, they are ready to make any possible sacrifice in order that exports to the Allies may be maintained. They regard today's meeting more in the light of a patriotic service and opportunity to assist in prosecuting the war, than as a business meeting, with the possibility of hardships and privations.

At the New Willard Hotel this afternoon they will be addressed by officials of the Food Administration and men familiar with present conditions on both sides of the ocean. When they reach New York they will be the guests of J. McE. Bowman, proprietor of the Biltmore Hotel and associated with the Food Administration.

3-787

The meeting is being attended by hotel representatives of the Food Administration from practically every state in the country and by managers and proprietors of the leading hotels of the United States. It is probable that a conservation program will be formulated this afternoon and details of its execution worked out at tomorrow's meeting in New York.

----zbg---

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

Washington, D. C.

for RELEASE

FOR EVENING
PAPERS OF DATE.

No. 788

March 29, 1918.

In making optional the observance of wheatless days in private homes, the Food Administration lifted no restrictions upon the consumption of wheat products. It is merely asking the American people to reduce their per capita consumption to not more than 1-1/2 pounds per week. If this can be done without the observance of wheatless meals or wheatless days the Food Administration will consider that its request is being observed.

Increased necessity for wheat with which to maintain the war bread of the Allies makes it imperative that American consumption be cut by at least 50 per cent. This places upon the individual the duty of eating not more than 1-1/2 pounds of wheat products each week. This is an absolute military necessity. The method of saving is being left entirely to the individual. If it can be done without foregoing the use of wheat at any specified meal or on any day, the Food Administration's urgent plea for further conservation will be carried out to the letter.

----- vmb -----

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

Washington, D. C.

for RELEASE

FOR EVENING NO. 793

PAPERS OF DATE.

MARCH 30, 1918.

---000---

No wheat flour will be used by the citizens of Grimes County, Texas, until after the next harvest, according to a telegram received today by the United States Food Administration. These patriots have already turned over to the Government at cost, one car of wheat flour and will deliver others now in transit. These cars are being diverted to an Atlantic port by the Wheat Export Company and the Food Administration for immediate shipment to the Allies.

In appreciation of this splendid act on the part of these Texas citizens the following wire was sent today:

"We compliment the citizens of Grimes County upon their patriotism, and every pound of wheat flour they conserve will go to our Associates in the War.

(Signed) "Hoover"

---mbg---

EARLY HISTORY OF GRIMES COUNTY

UNITED STATES FOOD ADMINISTRATION
WASHINGTON, D. C.

April 2, 1918.

IN YOUR REPLY REFER TO

6-H-424
Data Book Reference
Regulation - Wheat

SUBJECT: Action of Citizens of
Grimes County, Texas

TO ALL FEDERAL FOOD ADMINISTRATORS:

In connection with the decision of the leading hotel men of the country to go without wheat or wheat products until the next harvest, the action of the citizens of Grimes County, Texas, is significant.

On March ^{28th} 3rd, a telegram was received from Mr Peden, Federal Food Administrator for Texas, stating that the citizens of Grimes County, Texas, had offered to turn over to the Government a car of wheat flour and to deliver other cars then in transit, they themselves doing without wheat flour until the next harvest. This patriotic offer was accepted by the Food Administration and the flour was purchased and shipped to our Associates in the War.

For your information we enclose herewith copy of press release #793 regarding this offer. We believe this information should be sent to all your local administrators.

Faithfully yours

UNITED STATES FOOD ADMINISTRATION

Per

Enclosure

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

Washington, D. C.

for RELEASE

FOR MORNING

NO. 804.

April 2, 1918.

PAPERS OF APRIL 3, 1918.

-----0-----

Total Abstainers clubs, the members of which pledge themselves to refrain from the use of wheat absolutely, are being organized in Ohio.

The movement started in Mt. Gilead, Morrow County, following a meeting at which the pressing need of wheat for shipment to Europe was set forth.

Those at the meeting at once declared that, since the only wheat that can be shipped up to the next harvest is that which Americans save out of their normal consumption, they would pledge themselves not to eat any at all.

Several of these Total Abstainers clubs have already been organized, and the movement is spreading.

---av1---

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

FOR MORNING

*Washington, D. C.*PAPERS OF APRIL 16, 1918.
for RELEASE

APRIL 15, 1918.

---oOo---

Reports of hundreds of additional recruits to the growing army of American wheat abstainers have been received by the United States Food Administration in the past 24 hours. In nearly every instance the pledge takes the form to do without flour or wheat products altogether until after the next harvest.

New Orleans reports that a large proportion of all parishes in Louisiana have agreed to use no wheat until the new crop comes in, and merchants have offered the government all stocks of flour in stock, in transit or contracted for.

The same spirit is manifested in California. A message from Oakland states that the 200 members of the Ebell Club, the leading women's club of the city, have solemnly pledged to do without wheat until September, while the Faculty Women's Club of Stanford University has taken similar action.

Merchants and consumers of Oklahoma are offering stocks of flour to the government. The merchants of Valliant have offered all their stocks and those of Woodward and Lava all except two pounds per month per capita.

"Until we whip the Kaiser," comes in a message from citizens of Monticello, Fla., which says that a mass meeting of citizens has pledged to abstain from the use of wheat, and that the same sentiment is reflected in other sections of the State.

The Rotary Club of Colorado Springs, Colo., representing the business and professional men of the city, adopted resolutions to do without wheat following a rousing patriotic demonstration. The women of Dane County, Wisconsin, at a mass meeting, declared themselves in favor of a stringent wheat saving program.

The Texas Food Administrator, telegraphs that action already taken prepares him to declare "the great state of Texas, effective April 15, goes on a wheatless basis until June 1 or longer."

2 - 357

The hotel men of the Fergus County, Montana, Association of Hotel and Restaurant men have pledged themselves not to use wheat in any form from April 15 to the harvest.

---e)---

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

Washington, D. C.

for RELEASE FOR MORNING NO. 898. APRIL 29, 1918.
PAPERS OF APRIL 30, 1918.

---0---

Plans are now on foot to enlist 5,000,000 Texans in the war on wheat consumption. The following telegram signed by a committee appointed at a meeting Sunday night was received today by the Food Administration.

"Three hundred and twenty-five Federal, district, county and deputy food administrators of Texas in conference assembled pledge you their unswerving devotion, their steadfast service for God and country, to the end that our bread may sustain our gallant troops and our glorious Allies. We are enlisted for the period of the war. General Pershing's cable greatly stimulated our enthusiastic determination to organize 5,000,000 Texans into effective line of defense."

U. S. FOOD ADMINISTRATION

Washington, D. C.

for RELEASE FOR MORNING NO. 1019

PAPERS OF JUNE 14, 1918.

JUNE 13, 1918.

---00---

Actual wheat savings in the state of Texas since April 15 have been equivalent to 14,895,000 pounds of flour. Since the Texas people went on an absolutely wheatless basis they have saved sufficient flour to feed the entire American Army in France for one month--enough to feed the Texas boys in the National Guard, the National Army, the regular Army, the Navy and the Marine Corps, for an entire year.

More than 65,325 barrels of flour have been turned over to the Food Administration by Texas mills. Amounts purchased from merchants who had small surpluses come to more than 1,700,000 pounds.

The flour has been concentrated at Galveston and New Orleans, where it was resacked and sent direct to the Allied countries. One hundred and fifty thousand pounds of flour turned in by citizens of Fort Bend County was delivered direct to Camp Logan, at Houston, Texas, maintaining an adequate supply there until the departure of the Illinois Brigade for France.

The Federal Food Administrator for Texas has taken the position that every state should actually save enough flour out of its normal consumption to feed the boys it has placed in service.

The Texas savings are sufficient to make 19,558,500 loaves of bread baked without wheat substitutes. With the amount of substitutes now required of bakers it would be sufficient to make 26,078,000 loaves.

---ep---

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Barker, E. C., *Life of Stephen F. Austin*, Cokesbury Press, Dallas, Texas, 1925.
- Barker, E. C., *The Austin Papers*, in the *Annual Report of American Historical Association for 1919 and 1922*.
- Barker, E. C., "Minutes of the Ayuntamiento of San Felipe de Austin," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XXI, 299-301.
- Barker, Potts, and Ramsdell, *A School History of Texas*, Row, Peterson and Company, Chicago, Illinois, 1924.
- Berlet, Mrs. Sarah Wharton Groce, *Groce and Kindred Families* (MS.).
- Berleth, Mrs. Rosa Groce, "Jared E. Groce," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XX, 358.
- Brigance, Franklin, *Memoirs* (MS).
- Brosig, Mrs. Stella, *Journal* (MS).
- Bugbee, "The Old Three Hundred," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, I, 108-117.
- Davis, Anna L., "Old Montgomery," *Dallas Morning News*, December 3, 1925.
- De Shields, *Border Wars of Texas*. The Herald Company, Tioga, Texas, 1912.
- Dixon, "Men Who Made Texas," *The Houston Chronicle*, April, 1923.
- Edward, D. B., *History of Texas*, T. A. James & Co., Cincinnati, 1836.
- Edwards, Mrs. E. F., "History of Shiro," *Navasota Daily Examiner*, October 22, 1924.
- Fahey, Honorable Pat N., "Thanksgiving Address," *Navasota Daily Examiner*, November 30, 1918.
- Family Bibles*.
- Feriss, Morris P., *Descendants of Simon Hadley* (MS) in the possession of Mrs. Stella Brosig, Navasota, Texas.
- Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, Press of E. L. Steck, Austin, Texas, 1915.
- Gammel, *Laws of Texas, 1822-1898*, Gammel Book Store, Austin, 1898.
- Greenwod, Robert E., Junior, *History of the Greenwoods*, an essay in the high school library at Navasota, Texas. (1925).
- Greer, Solomon, *Tax Assessor's Record for Grimes County*, 1858. The original is in the possession of W. W. Greer, Carlos, Texas.
- Grimes County Commissioner's Court Records*, Anderson, Texas.
- Grimes County Probate Court Records*, Anderson, Texas.
- Grimes County Deed Records*, Anderson, Texas
- Grimes County School Board Minutes*, Anderson, Texas
- Groce, William M., "John A. Wharton," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XIX, 272, ff.
- Index of Texas Revolutionary Heroes*, Archives of State Library, Austin, Texas.
- Looscan, "Harris County, 1822-1845," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XIX, 52.
- Montgomery County Transcribed Deed Records*, Anderson, Texas.
- Muster Rolls from Grimes County*, in the Archives of the State Library, Austin, Texas.

- Neblett, Buffington and McDonald, *Committee Report to Orphan's Friend Lodge Number Seventeen* (MS.) September 6, 1926, original is in the possession of W. T. Neblett, Anderson, Texas.
- Oglesby, J. K., "And So Cotton Came to Texas," *Farm and Ranch*, October 29, 1928.
- Owen, Thos. M., *History and Dictionary of Alabama Biography*, IV, S. J. Clark Publishing Co., Chicago, 1921.
- Polley, J. B., *Hood's Texas Brigade*, The Neale Publishing Company, New York, 1910.
- Proceedings of the Association of Texas Veterans*, for the Years 1873, 1892, 1898, and 1899.
- Rochelle, "Here Texas Great Men Once Lodged," *Dallas Morning News*, October 25, 1925.
- Stoneham, Philipia, *History of the Stoneham Family in Grimes County*, an essay in the high school library at Navasota, Texas.
- Texas, Abstract of Land Titles*, 1821-1836.
- Texas Almanac*, 1857-1865, 1867-1873, 1875-1876, 1910-1914, 1920-1929.
- Texas General Land Office Records*, 1821-1836.
- United States Census Reports*, Eighth and Eleventh.
- West, Anson, *History of Methodism in Alabama*, Nashville Methodist Church, 1893.
- Williams, Amelia, *Siege and Fall of the Alamo* (MS.) University of Texas Library.
- Wilson, Hamer, *Biography of Jesse Grimes*, Essay in the high school library at Navasota, Texas, 1925.
- Wilson, Hannibal H., *Biography of Hanibal Honestus Boone*, an essay in the high school library, Navasota, Texas, 1925.

LETTERS

- Andrews, L. G., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 12, 1929.
- Ashford, Joe, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Hempstead, Texas December 3, 1928.
- Ballou, L., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Brady, Texas, August 15, 1928.
- Barry, L. H., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 3, 1928.
- Blackshear, W. E., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 4, 1928.
- Boone, H. H., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, August 16, 1928.
- Castle, Mrs. J. L., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Plantersville, Texas, August 3, 1928.
- Crutchfield, Mrs. Frank, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, August 23, 1928.
- Davis, Mrs. Mary, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Montgomery, Texas, January 13, 1929.
- Day, Mrs. John, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Hempstead, Texas, September 20, 1928.
- Floyd, Doris, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, June 5, 1929.
- Floyd, William, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 5, 1928.
- Greenwood, Mrs. John W., to Robert E. Greenwood Junior*, dated at Houston, Texas, August 6, 1928.
- Grimes, Jesse to Cordova, Esq.*, dated March 26, 1857. The original is possessed by Mrs. W. C. Preston of Fort Worth, Texas.
- Grimes, Rufus, to John G. Walker*. This is an undated letter in the possession of Mrs. Etta Weaver of Navasota, Texas.

- Grissett, Mrs. Josephine, to E. L. Blair*, dated at North Zulch Texas, July 28, 1928.
- Hadley, Mrs. Mattie, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 23, 1929.
- Harrison, Margaret J., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Bedias, Texas, July 15, 1928.
- Hill, Roland C., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Anderson, Texas, July 23, 1928.
- Kennard, Minnie, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, January 13, 1929.
- Landrum, John, to Nancy Landrum*, dated in Rusk county, Texas, August 20, 1859.
- Landrum, Mrs. John, to John Landrum*, dated 1889.
- Leake, Francis, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, June 28, 1929.
- Libby, E. W., Chief Clerk, Department of Commerce, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Washington, July 24, 1929.
- Lott, Mrs. W. W., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 1, 1928.
- McCary, Mrs. Mary, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Iola, Texas, July 2, 1928.
- McDonald, J. G., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Anderson, Texas, June 11, 1928; July 15, 1928; July 25, 1928; and January 1, 1929.
- McDonald, Mrs. Wallace, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Austin, Texas, December 23, 1928.
- Montgomery, J. L., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Richards, Texas, November 8, 1928.
- Pearce, Ben, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, June 6, 1929.
- Peden, E. A., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Houston, Texas, July 8, 1929.
- Robison, J. T., to Mrs. E. Weaver*, dated at Austin, Texas, March 3, 1929.
- Saunders, Mrs. W. S. D., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 3, 1928.
- Schumacher, W. T., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Keith, Texas, August 2, 1928.
- Smither, Harriet, Archivist, State Library, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Austin, Texas, November 9, 1928.
- Stephenson, Mrs. Ella, to E. L. Blair*, dated at Plantersville,, Texas, August 1, 1928.
- Taylor, Henry, H., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Bedias, Texas, August 3, 1928.
- Thompson, Mrs. R. M., to Robert E. Greenwood, Junior*, dated August 3, 1928.
- Thompson, to Mrs. W. W. Lott*, dated June 22, 1927, original is now with Mrs. W. W. Lott, of Navasota, Texas.
- Townsend, E. G., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Belton, Texas, July 7, 1929.
- Tucker, H. T., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Plantersville, Texas, August 1, 1928.
- Wheeler, A. H., to E. L. Blair*, dated April 27, 1929.
- Whitesides, Mrs. James B., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Hempstead, Texas, December 3, 1928.
- Williams, W. W., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Conroe, Texas, December 13, 1928.
- Wilson, Mrs. A. H., to E. L. Blair*, dated at Navasota, Texas, July 27, 1928.
- Zuber, W. P., to T. P. Buffington*, dated at Iola, Texas, June 26, 1903.

INDEX

- Aes, District of, 167
Ahumada, Mateo, 81
Alcande Districts, 11
Alcorn, Elijah, 22
Allcorn, John H., 22
Allen, Thos. G., 22
Alta Mira, 29, 123, 102
Anahuac, 113
Anderson, Established, 29
Anderson, Kenneth L., 29, 123
Andrus, Lizzie, 138
Anglin, Elisha, 131
Anglin, Margaret, 131
Armour, Delilah, 151, 45
Armour, Denina, 45
Armour, Elizabeth, 45
Armour, Polly Ann, 45-46
Armour, Robert, 45-46, 151
Ariola, Edward, 143
Ariola, Leovenia, 106 *footnote*
Arnold, Daniel, 46
Arnold, Rachel, 47
Ashford, Joe, 154, 156
Atkinson, Jesse B., 22
Attorneys of Grimes County, 202-203
Austin, Moses, 57
Austin, Stephen F., 11, 12, 15-16, 53,
60, 62, 76, 78, 92, 157
Babbitt, Benjamin, 47
Bailey, Levi, 156
Balantine, James, 23 *footnote*
Ballou, Ann Maria, 46
Ballou, George, 46
Ballou, Lucretia, 46
Ballou, Julia A., 46
Ballou, Lugenio, 46
Ballou, S. T., 46
Ballou, Wilford, C., 46
Barker, Dr. E. C., 13 *footnote*
Barnes, James W., 96 *footnote*
Barnett, Charles, 26 *footnote*
Barnett, G. W., 22
Barry, H. L., 35
Bartling, Mary, 164
Baxter, Mrs. W., 162
Bowman, Miss Grace H., 54
Bowman, James I., 54
Bowman, John, 19
Rowman, Margaret, 54
Bowman, Samuel, 55
Bayou Boeff, 129
Beales, Hiram, 22
Bedias Indians in Grimes County, 33-
36
Bell, James, 47
Bennett, Joseph L., 26
"Bernardo," 80
Berlet, Mrs. Sarah Wharton Groce, 78
Berleth, Mrs. Roas Groce, 78 *footnote*
Berry, Clarence, 134
Berry, Ella, 134
Berry, Mary, 134
Berry, William, 134
Berryman, Sarah, 131
Berryman, William, 131, 106
Bethel Cemetery, 144
Biard, D., 24
Big Dry Creek, 130
Black, Anna Mae, 49
Black, Calvin H., 50
Black, "Captain La fitte," 52
Black, Charlie L., 49, 50
Black, Frank, 49
Black, Gavin Bingley, Jr., 49
Black, Gavin Bingley, 48
Black, George Patrick, 49
Black, Gus S., 48-49 *footnote*, 52
Black, Hambright H., 49
Black, Henrietta Porter, 49
Black, Isa, 50
Black, Jesse Lee, 49
Black, John L. M., 48 *footnote*
Black, John Maxie, 49
Black, John S., 48, 50
Black, Lucinda, 48
Black, Mary, 50
Black, Mary Ann, 49
Black, Marcus D., 52
Black, Monroe, 48
Black, Richard, 49
Black, Sallie Mike, 49
Black, Tom, 49
Black, Tumpie, 50
Black, William, 52, 48
Black, J. W., 41
Bibliography, 240-242

- Bingham, Elizabeth, 159
 Bonnie Nook, 86 *footnote*
 Boone, Evelyn, 136
 Boone, Gordon, 136
 Boone, Hannibal H., Jr., 136
 Boone, Hannibal Honestus, 136–138
 Boone, Hood, 136
 Boone, Latham, 136
 Boone, Louise, 136
 Boone, Mary, 136
 Boone, Susie, 136
 Boone, Thomas Green, 137
 Boone, William, 136
 Bowman, John, Biography, 53–55
 Brazos Alcalde Districts, 11
 Brazos Department Created, 13
 Bravo District, 12, 157
 Bravo, General Nicolas, 12
 Brigance, Burton, 43 *footnote*
 Brigance, Edna, 43 *footnote*
 Brigance, Franklin, 29, 40, 42, 43 *footnote*
 Brigance, A. Franklin, 43 *footnote*
 Brigance, Mrs. Franklin, 41 *footnote*
 Brigance, John H., 43 *footnote*
 Brigance, Joseph Tucker, 43 *footnote*
 Brigance, Mattie, 43 *footnote*
 Brigance, Thomas, 43 *footnote*
 Britton, Francis, 75
 Britton, Mary, 75
 Britton, Rosanna Ward, 75
 Brown, Alexander, 55
 Bryan, Guy M., 113 *footnote*
 Buck, Miss, 105
 Bugbee, 77 *footnote*
 Buffalo Bayou, 166
 Buffington, Anderson, 29
 Buffington, T. P., 96 *footnote*, 169
 Burney, Francis, 56
 Burney, Nancy, 56
 Burney, Richard, 56
 Burney, Sarah, 56
 Burney, Susan, 56
 Burney, Tapley, 56
 Burney, William, 56
 Burney, Wm. Jr., 56
 Bush, 64 *footnote*
 Buttrile, Mrs. Thos., 56
 Byars, Noale T., 23 *footnote*
 Campbell, C. K. D., 57 *footnote*
 Campbell, Cyrus, 56
 Calvit, Mary Ann, 89
 Campbell, Rebecca, 56
 Campbell, William, 57 *footnote*
 Carter, Amanda, 153
 Carter, Ella, 153
 Carter, Hamp, 153
 Carter, Julia, 153
 Carter, Mattie, 153
 Carter, Quince, 153
 Carter, W. C., 152
 Cartwright, John, 80
 Castle, Mrs. T. L., 133 *footnote*
 Chapel Hill College, 86 *footnote*
 Chart showing subdivisions of Washington Municipality, 27
 Choat, Prudence, 152
 Chriesman, H., 24, 128, 22, 55
 Chanie, J. B., 22
 Clampitt, Travis G., 22
 Cleburne, General Pat, 121
 Clark, James, 22
 Clow, Robert J., 23 *footnote*
 Cobb, William, 106 *footnote*
 Coe, Phillip, 25
 Cole, John P., 22, 82
 Coleman, Captain, 117
 Collard, E., 25; Elijah, 26
 Colorado Alcalde District, 11
 Comanche Peak, 42
 Commissioners of Grimes County, 209–212
 Connelly, Isaac, 23 *footnote*
 Conner, Alfred, 59
 Conner, Ambrose, 58
 Conner, Fannie, 58
 Conner, Fred, 59
 Conner, Garvin, 59
 Conner, James, 60, 58
 Conner, Joe, 59
 Conner, John C., 59, 57, 62
 Conner, John G., 22
 Conner, Julia, 59
 Conner, L. A., 58
 Conner, Lula, 59
 Conner, Luther, 60
 Conner, Mance, 59
 Conner, Martha, 58

- Conner, Mattie, 59
 Conner, Mary, 58
 Conner, Ora, 59
 Conner, Reddie, 58
 Conner, Robert, 59
 Conner, Sallie, 59
 Conner, Sylvester, 58, 60
 Conner, Zebb, 60
 Constitution of October 4, 1824, 11
 Consultation, 25
 Convention of March, 1836, 25
 Cooper, Alfred M., 22
 Copenhagen, William, 23 *footnote*
 Cordova, J. De, 73
 Cornough, Hanna, 61
 Coshatte Trace, 104
 County Clerks of Grimes County, 196–198
 County Government for Grimes County, 29
 County Seat of Grimes County, Location of, 29
 Cox, James, 60
 Cox, James Jr., 60
 Cox, Sarah, 61
 Crawley, Mrs., 150
 Crittenden, G. M., 67 *footnote*
 Crutchfield, Frank, 140
 Cushattee Indians, 36
 Cummings, James, 82
 Cummings, M., 24, 22, 25
 Darwin, James, 104
 Davis, Anna L., 34
 Davis, James, 93
 Davis, Mrs. Mary, 126 *footnote*
 Davis, President, 112
 DeBray's Regiment, 65, 67
 Deck, Betsey, 159
 Declaration of Independence, Texas, 25
 DeMaret, Carrie, 111
 Demaret, Captain Edgar, 111
 Devereaux, Anna, 71
 Devereaux, Ben F., 71
 Devereaux, James, 127
 Devereaux, William, 127
 Dickson, David C., 29, 96 *footnote*
 Dickson Rangers, 190
 Dickinson & Westcott, 62
 Dillard, T., 24
 Dillard, Thos., 23
 Deshazo, Robert, 166 *footnote*
 District of Aes, 167
 District Clerks of Grimes County, 199–200
 Dodson, Archelaus B., 30 *footnote*
 Dunham, Mr. and Mrs., 81
 Dunham, Annie R., 69
 Dunham, D. D., 26
 Dunham, John and Rotilda, 69
 Dunham, Robert Holmes, 69 *footnote*
 Durst, Mrs. John, 41
 Easley, Edward, 151
 Eagle Island, 86, 89
 Edwards, Ed Austin, 171
 Edwards, E. E., 167
 Edwards, Mrs. E. F., 41 *footnote*
 Edwards, Elisha Floyd, 171
 Edwards, Mrs. Joe, 41 *footnote*
 Edwards, Joseph Rush, 170
 Edwards, Mary Elizabeth, 171
 Edwards, Sarah Cornelia, 171
 Edwards, Virginia, 171
 Edwards, Waren O., 171
 Edwards, William Oscar, 171
 Ehinger, Anna, 76
 Election of first officers for Washington Municipality, 23
 Election, Recapitulation table 1835, 24
 Election to determine location of county seat for Grimes county, 29
 Evans, Moses, 23 *footnote*
 Evitt, E. G., 22
 Fahey, Margaret, 129
 Fanthorp, Henry, 26, 29, 96, 121
 Fanthorp Inn, 122
 Fanthorp, John, 124
 Fanthorp, Morgan, & Kennard, 122
 Fanthorp, Mary A., 124
 Fisher, John and Westley, 104
 FitzGibbons, William, 61
 Floyd, Jim V., 51 *footnote*
 Fort Groce, 84
 Fredonian Rebellion, 53, 81
 Fulmore's History of Texas, 15
 Fulton, Alexander, 85
 Fulton, Courtney Ann, 85
 Fulton, Elizabeth, 62
 Fulton, Samuel, 62

- Fuqua's Prairie, 65
 Garrett, Charles, 63
 Garrett, Claiborne, 62
 Garrett, Thos. W., 63
 Gee, Alfred, 79
 Gin, first in Texas, 79-80
 Gillaspie, Captain James, 168
 Gillett, Boswell, 63
 Gillett, Catherine, 63
 Gillett, Hanna, 63
 Gillett, J., 63
 Gillett, Samuel, S., 63
 Gordon, Charles Peter, 136, 138
 Gordon, Elizabeth, 136
 Gordon, John A., 138
 Gordon, Mary A., 136
 Gordon, Sarah W., 136
 Gordon, Sue H., 136
 Gordon, William, 136
 Graham, John, 22
 Grappin, Polly (Molly), 140
 Grassy Creek, 150
 Graves, first probate judge of Grimes county, 29
 Gray, James, 23 *footnote*
 General Council, Jesse Grimes, 25
 Government, Local in Texas, 15-19
 Goodrich, B. B., 25, 26, 102 *footnote*
 Great Falls, on Brazos, 150
 Green's Brigade, 69
 Greenwood, Acsah, 63
 Greenwood, Alfred, 71
 Greenwood, Annie, 66
 Greenwood, Annie Dunham, 76
 Greenwood, Benjamin, 71
 Greenwood, Benjamin Franklin, 65
 Greenwood, Betsey, 63, 142
 Greenwood, Caliph, 63
 Greenwood, Charlie, 66
 Greenwood, Edward, 66
 Greenwood, Elizabeth Evelyn, 65, 67
 Greenwood, Emma, 63
 Greenwood, Eugene, 66
 Greenwood, Evelyn, 66
 Greenwood, Franklin, 130
 Greenwood, Franklin Bailey, 65, 69
 Greenwood, Franklin Jarvis, 63-64, 70, 134
 Greenwood, Hannibal Boone, 70
 Greenwood, Harriet Ewing, 65
 Greenwood, Helen, 122 *footnote*
 Greenwood, Henry, 72
 Greenwood, Henry Bailey 63-64, 71, 142
 Greenwood, History of, 65 *footnote*
 Greenwood, Jafeth, 64 *footnote*
 Greenwood, James, 66
 Greenwood, Joe, 63
 Greenwood, Joel, 64, 71, 134
 Greenwood, John, 63, 65
 Greenwood, John W., 70
 Greenwood, Josie Frank, 70
 Greenwood, Lee, 66
 Greenwood, Lena, 71
 Greenwood, Louise, 71
 Greenwood, Mary, 64-69
 Greenwood, Nancy Caroline, 63-66
 Greenwood, Robert Ewing, 70
 Greenwood, Sarah Emaline, 65, 68
 Greenwood, Stella, 71
 Greenwood, Thomas Benton, 65, 67, 70
 Greenwood, Vivian, 71
 Greenwood, Walter, 71
 Greenwood, William Wood, 70
 Greenwood, William Montgomery, 65, 72
 Greer, J. C., 31
 Greer, W. W., 201 *footnote*
 Gregg, Darius, 72
 Grey, Pleasant, 26
 Gregory, Dudley, 156
 Gregory, Edgar, 156
 Gregory, Eleanor White, 156
 Grimes, Bethsheba, 72
 Grimes, Alfred Calvin, 75
 Grimes County Greys, 180-188
 Grimes County, creation of, 28
 Grimes, Emily, 76
 Grimes, Gordon, 75
 Grimes, Harriet Elizabeth, 75
 Grimes, Harvey, 76
 Grimes, Helen, 76
 Grimes, Jacob, 75
 Grimes, Jesse, 19, 22-28, 37-38, 72, 130
 Grimes, Leonard, 76
 Grimes, Lucinda, 75

- Grimes, Martha Ann, 75
 Grimes, Mary Jane, 75
 Grimes, Nancy, 76
 Grimes Prairie, 130, 150
 Grimes, Robert Henry, 75
 Grimes, Rufus, 75
 Grimes, Sampson, 72
 Grimes, Willard Ward, 75
 Grimes, Walker, Madison and Montgomery Counties constitute Representative District Nineteen, 30
 Grisset, Charlie, 106
 Grissett, Mrs. Josephine, 107 *footnote*
 Grissett, W. H., 107 *footnote*
 Goodrich, Virginia, 102
 Groce, Barbara Mackall, 89
 Groce, Bill Marcus, 85
 Groce, Charles Courtney, 85
 Groce, Edwin, 89
 Groce, Edwin Waller, 85
 Groce, Eliza Ellen, 85
 Groce, Ellison Kirby, 85
 Groce, Jared Ellison, 22, 23 *footnote*, 35, 76, 77-90, 95, 167
 Groce, Jared Fulton, 85
 Groce, John Harris, 85
 Groce, Leonard Waller, 19, 80, 84-85
 Groce, Martha, 85
 Groce, Mary Henrietta, 85
 Groce, Mrs. Rosa, 35
 Groce, Sarah Ann, 84-85
 Groce, Sarah Wharton, 85
 Groce, Waller William, 84
 Groce, William W., 78
 Guthrie, John F., 22
 Hadley, Ann, 91
 Hadley, Anthony D., 102, 97
 Hadley, Benjamin, 93-94
 Hadley, C. G., 101
 Hadley, Caroline, 97
 Hadley, Catherine, 91
 Hadley, Cynthia, 94
 Hadley, Deborah, 91
 Hadley, Denny Porterfield, 97
 Hadley Island, 93
 Hadley, Grantham, 97, 100, 95
 Hadley, Hanna, 91
 Hadley, Henry F., 97, 101
 Hadley, James, 94
 Hadley, Jane, 93-94
 Hadley, Jesse, 94
 Hadley, John, 93
 Hadley, Joseph, 91
 Hadley, Joshua, 21, 23-25, 39, 82
 Hadley, King, 93
 Hadley, L. M., 101
 Hadley, Mary, 92-94
 Hadley, Margaret Obedience, 98
 Hadley, Obedience, 96-98
 Hadley's Prairie, 94-95
 Hadley, Ruth, 91-92
 Hadley, Sallie, 100
 Hadley, Sarah, 92
 Hadley, Seth, 101
 Hadley, Simon, 91-94
 Hadley, Thomas, 92-93
 Hadley, Travis King, 97
 Hadley, William B., 97, 101
 Hall, James Sr., 25
 Hall, James Jr., 24
 Hall, John W., 23-24
 Hall, W. A., 22
 Hanley, Millie, 50
 Harper, Daniel E., 29
 Harris, Ben, 103
 Harris, John B., 102
 Harris, John G., 103
 Harris, Mary, 103
 Harrison, B. H., 40 *footnote*
 Harrison, James T., 112
 Harrison, Laura, 112
 Harrison, Mrs. Margaret, 39 *footnote*, 38
 Hawkins, William W., 22
 Hays, Jacob, 103
 Henderson, Bettie, 94
 Henry, Samuel, 23 *footnote*
 Hill, Alice, 99
 Hill, Ben J., 100
 Hill, Gibbs, 99
 Hill, Joshua P., 100
 Hill, Mollie, 100
 Hill, Oliver H. P., 99
 Hill, Paul O., 100
 Hobbs, Nancy, 65
 Holland, Frank, 105
 Holland, Francis, 104-106, 19, 56, 77 *footnote*

- Holland, James, 105, 107
 Holland, Katie, 106, 128
 Holland, Nancy, 105
 Holland, Sarah, 106
 Holland, Susanna, 56
 Holland, Susie, 105
 Holland, Tapley, 105
 Holland, William, 56, 77, 104-106
 Hood's Texas Brigade, 180-188
 Hoover, as United States Food Administrator, 228-9, 233-4
 Houston, Margaret, 111
 Houston, Sam, 73, 81, 83
 Hoxey, Asa, 25
 Hutchison, John W., 48
 Indians, 105
 Indians attack John S. Black, 50 *foot-note*
 Indians attack Hadley boys, 85
 Indians capture Mrs. Crawley, 150
 Indian Expedition of 1839, 42
 Indians, Kickapoos, 167
 Indians kill Mrs. Taylor, 39
 Indians kill man on Wallace Prairie, 42
 Indians kill Kennard's calves, 41
 Indian precautions by whites, 41
 Indians removed from Grimes county, 44
 Indian relations with whites, 37
 Indian stories as told by pioneer settlers, 38
 Indians visit the T. P. Plaster home, 38
 Jack, Abner, 112
 Jack, Archibald, 111
 Jack, Captain James, 108, 111
 Jack, Captain Guy, 108 *footnote*
 Jack, Cynthia, 111
 Jack, Charity, 109
 Jack, Churchill, 112
 Jack, James, 109-112
 Jack, Hallie, 113
 Jack, Harry, 114
 Jack, Isaac, 77, 114
 Jack, Jacob, 108
 Jack, John, 109
 Jack, Jane, 109
 Jack, Laura, 113
 Jack, Margaret, 109
 Jack, Mary, 109
 Jack, Patrick, 111
 Jack, Patrick C., 108-114
 Jack, Robert, 109
 Jack, Samuel, 109
 Jack, Spencer H., 112, 128
 Jack, Thomas, 113
 Jack, William H., 111-112
 Jackson, Andrew, 115
 Jackson, E. D., 22
 Jackson, Elbert, 115
 Jackson, Job, 115
 Jackson, Lettie, 115
 Jackson, Martha, 115
 Jackson, Gen. Andrew, 149
 Jackson, Henry, 115
 Jackson, Simantha, 114-116
 Jones, Clarence, 153
 Jones, Lenin, 151
 Jones, Lewis, 23 *footnote*
 Jones, Timothy, 116
 Jones,, William C., 23 *footnote*
 Johnson, Eva, 58
 Johnson, Ben, 58
 Johnson, Chriesman & Company, 128
 Johnson, G. B., 58
 Johnson, Julia, 58
 Judiciary in Texas under Mexico, 17
 Judges of Grimes county, 196-198
 Jurors, manner of selecting, 18
 Kendal, Abner K., 74
 Kennard, Anthony Drew, 24, 39, 116-124
 Kennard, A. W., 120
 Kennard, Dolly, 119
 Kennard, Ed, 121
 Kennard, John, 119
 Kennard, John H., 120
 Kennard, John R., 117
 Kennard, Lucy, 121
 Kennard, Mark L., 117, 119
 Kennard, Martha, 118
 Kennard, Mary, 118-121
 Kennard, Michell, 102
 Kennard, Mike M., 117-122
 Kennard, Nannie, 119
 Kennard, Permelia, 118
 Kennard, Rachel, 117-122
 Kennard, Sallie, 118

- Kennard, Sarah, 116
 Kennard, Virginia, 117
 Kennard, William, 117-118
 Keyser, Annie, 64 *footnote*
 Kickapoo Indians, 36
 Kickapoo Village, 167
 Kiell Campaign, 119
 King, Captain, 135-136
 King, Elizabeth, 94 *footnote*
 Lake, Frank L., 52
 Lake, Nelson, 62
 Landrum, John, 125-127
 Landrum, Mary, 126
 Landrum, Sarah, 127
 Landrum, Wells, 127
 Landrum, Zacharia and Letitia, 125
 Laughlin, William, 127
 Lawrence, Addie, 67
 Lawrence, Eveline, 68
 Lawrence, Grace, 68
 Lawrence, James, 66, 68
 Leake, Francis, 141 *footnote*
 Lewis, William, 22
 Liendo, 85
 Liles, Louise, 169
 "Little Warrior," 150
 Local government in Texas, 15-19
 Looscan, 80 *footnote*
 Lott, John, 23 *footnote*
 Lott, Mrs. W. W., 109 *footnote*, 111
 Lovett, Dr., 108 *footnote*
 Lyles, N. W., 81
 Lyons, Mariah L., 156
 Lyons, Joe, 156
 Lynch, James, 23 *footnote*
 Lynch, J. P., 24
 Madison county, created, 30
 Magee, Danial, 96 *footnote*
 Magee, Felix W., 96 *footnote*
 Mail Route, first in Grimes county,
 122
 Mann, Mary Ann, 166 *footnote*, 168
 Map, location of original grants in
 Grimes county, 179
 Map of Texas, 1835, 14
 Marsh, Shubael, 22, 25
 Martin, John F., 43 *footnote*, 96-97
 Martin, M. T., 23 *footnote*
 Martin's Prairie, 153
 Martin, Winston Travis, 97
 Martin, William A., 97
 Martin, Wyly, 23
 Massie, Josiah C., 96 *footnote*
 Masonic Lodge, 96
 Mason, S. D., 81
 Mays, Mary, 150
 Maxwell, William, 31
 Meachum, Colonel William W., 125
footnote
 Mecklenburg Resolutions, 109 *footnote*
 Mercer, Peter M., 23 *footnote*
 Mercantile Firm, first in Grimes
 county, 122
 Metes and Bounds of Grimes county,
 28
 Mier Expedition, 67 *footnote*
 Mitchell, A., 24
 Mitchell, Asa, 23, 25
 Mitchell, James, 26
 Millican, 77
 Millican, Andrew, 77, 104
 Millican Bend, 77
 Military preparedness against the In-
 dians, 43
 Militia in Texas, 18
 Miller, James B., 23
 Miller, Sam R., 23 *footnote*
 Miller, Thos. P., 136
 Miller, William H., 22
 Montgomery, Andrew, 133
 Montgomery, Andy, 132
 Montgomery, Anna, 71, 132
 Montgomery county, creation of, 26
 Montgomery, Edley, 132
 Montgomery, Emily, 132
 Montgomery, Dr. J. T., 71 *footnote*
 Montgomery, Maggie, 133
 Montgomery, Mary, 64, 132
 Montgomery, Nannie, 133
 Montgomery, Queeny, 132
 Montgomery, Sallie, 132
 Montgomery, Saphronia, 133
 Montgomery, William, 65, 132-134
 Moore, James, 22
 Moore, James W., 134
 Moore, John, 135
 Moore, John H., 117
 Moore, Lidia E., 136

- Moore, Mrs. Luke, 54
 Moore, Margaret Ann, 48
 Moore, Matilda, 134
 Moore, Sallie, 124
 Mooring, Guilford M., 29
 Mooring, Minnie, 101
 Mooring, L. M., 101
 Morris, Bethel, 23 *footnote*
 Morrison, Judge Gwynn, 161 *footnote*
 Municipalities of Texas in 1836, 13
 Murray, Honorable Amelia M., visits
 Grimes county, 123
 Muster Rolls from Grimes county,
 180-195
 MacDonald & Ridgely, 60
 McAdoo, Little, 108
 McAlpine, Dougald, 81
 McCown, J. B., 31
 McCown, James, 28
 McCullough, Green, 58
 McDonald, Henry Brown, 124 *foot-*
 note
 McDonald, James Green, 41 *footnote*,
 121, 124-126
 McDonald, Mrs. Maude Wallace, 154
 footnote
 McDonald, Thomas, 127
 McDowell, Elizabeth, 128
 McDowell, M., 106 *footnote*, 128
 McDonald, Sam, 128
 McGinty, Mrs. J. T., 38 *footnote*
 McGuffin, Hugh, 62, 129
 McGuffin, Joyce V., 97
 McGuffin, William, 128
 MvIver, Dave and Nancy Ann, 107
 footnote
 McIntire, Edward, 131
 McIntire, Frank, 131
 McIntire, John, 131
 McIntire, Lawrence, 131
 McIntire, Margaret, 129-131
 McIntire, Robert, 129-131
 McIntire, Samuel, 131
 McIntire, Sarah, 42, 131
 McIntire, William, 129-131
 McMahan, Daniel B., 132
 McNealy, Elizabeth, 139
 McNealy, Jesse B., 139
 McWaters, Russel H., 62
 Navasota county, 26 *footnote*
 Neblett, W. T., 96 *footnote*
 Newell, John, 22
 Newspapers, *Central Texian*, 201 *foot-*
 note
 Nobles, Sallie, 121
 Officials of Grimes county, 196-214
 "Old Hickory" Jackson, 114
 Orphans' Friend Lodge, 96
 Pankey, James W., 139, 144
 Palo Gacho, 147
 Pointer's Prairie, 135
 Patrick, George M., 96 *footnote*, 30
 footnote
 Payne, Epps D., 22
 Payne, John, 139
 Peden, E. A., 220, 224, 225
 Peden, Mrs. William, 152 *footnote*
 Penn, Letitia Manor, 92
 Penn, William Jr., 92
 Perry, Albert G., 29
 Petition to create Grimes county, 28
 Petition to create Washington munic-
 aplity, 22
 Peterson, Mrs. Mary, 140
 Peterson, John, 140
 Pettus, William, 155
 Pierce, Mrs. Jesse, 60
 Pitts, Mary Elizabeth, 141
 Pitts, Ike, 141
 Pitts, John Griffin, 141
 Pitts, Levi, 140-141
 Pitts, Nancy, 141
 Pitts, Obediah, 140-141
 Plaster, Benjamin, 39 *footnote*
 Plaster, Captain T. P., 39 *footnote*
 Plaster, Frank, 40 *footnote*
 Plaster, Millican M., 39 *footnote*
 Plaster, Joseph H., 40
 Plaster, Margaret J., 40 *footnote*
 Plaster, Martha, 39 *footnote*
 Plaster, Thomas A., 39 *footnote*
 Plaster, Mrs. T. P., 38
 Pleasant Hill Plantation, 89
 Pool, Ben, 63
 Post office, first in Grimes county, 122
 Powell, Arch, 130
 Powell, Mahala, 130
 Prairie Plains, 163

- Preston, Mrs. W. C., 38 *footnote*, 76
 Purvis, Frank, 13 *footnote*, 178
 Queen Victoria's maid visits Fan-
 thorp, 123
 Quick, Moses, 64 *footnote*
 Ray, Robert, 64 *footnote*, 142
 Ray, Margaret, 142
 Rainwater, W. J., 31
 Rea, Andrew, 143
 Reeddy, E., 24
 Representatives for Grimes county,
 205-207
 Representatives from Washington mu-
 nicipality, 25
 Retreat, 80
 Reynolds, A. C., 23
 Reynolds, Caswell, 151
 Richardson, D. L., 55
 Richey, Jim, 60
 Richey, Leon, 60
 Richey, Marion, 60
 Rivers, Antonio, 143 *footnote*
 Rogers, Susan Emily, 43 *footnote*
 Robinson, Baldon, 22
 Robinson, William, 26, 82, 95
 Roberts, Stephen R., 22, 25
 Roll of Original Grantees, 175-177
 Rowland, Mary, 92
 Rowland, Thomas, 92
 "Run Away Scrape," 83
 San Felipe de Austin, 13, 73, 105
 Sapp, W. E., 81
 Saul, Thos. S., 23
 Saunders, Margaret, 35 *footnote*
 Saunders, W. S. D., 41 *footnote*, 131
footnote, 136
 School Board Members of Grimes
 county, 213-214
 Schumacher, Henry, 61 *footnote*
 Scotch Tories, 92
 Senators for Grimes county, 208-209
 Shannon, Aaron, 162
 Shannon, J., 24
 Sheriffs of Grimes County, 199-200
 Sherman, Colonel Sidney, 168
 Sheppard, Sarah, 77
 Sheppard, William, 28
 Siddall, Elizabeth, 213 *footnote*
 Simmons, Mary, 59
 Simms, Adeline, 144
 Simms, John, 144
 Simms, J. T., 144 *footnote*
 Simms, Ignacius, 143
 Simms, Mary Anne, 144
 Simms, Mary Jane, 144
 Simms, Nancy, 144
 Simms Prairie, 144
 Simms, Richards, 144
 Simms, William, 144
 Simpson, J. W., 23 *footnote*
 Slaves, brought by Groce, 79
 Smith, Ben F. (Tobe), 50 *footnote*
 Smith, Martha, 75
 Smith, Sarah, 119
 Soop, 22
 Spencer, Miss, 112
 Splan, J. M., 23 *footnote*
 Stage Lines, 122
 Steamboats on Brazos, 135
 Stephenson, James B., 31
 Stevens, Ashley R., 22
 Stewart, Dr. Charles B., 167

 Stone, Annie B., 124
 Stone, Eleanor, 124
 Stone, Henry Fanthorp, 124
 Stone, Julia, 124
 Stone, William M., 124
 Stoneham, David, 67
 Stoneham, Erastus, 67
 Stoneham, George Crowder, 67
 Stoneham, Henry, 68
 Stoneham, John, 67
 Stoneham, Joseph F., 67
 Stoneham, Philipia, 67 *footnote*
 Stoneham, Thomas Benton, 67
 Stoneham, Sebron, 67
 Stoveall, Bailey, 134
 Stoveall, Hattie, 134
 Stoveall, Will, 134
 Surveyors for Grimes County, 202-203
 Superintendents for Grimes County,
 204-205
 Suttle, Dee, 59
 Suttle, Mark, 59
 Suttle, Reddie, 59
 Swanson, J. T., 170 *footnote*, 218

- Swanson, Mrs. J. T., 164 *footnote*, 170
footnote
- Swisher, James G., 22
- Tax Assessors of Grimes County, 201–203
- Tax Collectors of Grimes County, 201–203
- Taylor, General Zachary, visits Fanthorpe's Inn, 123
- Taylor, Henry H., 57 *footnote*
- Taylor, Mrs., killed by Indians, 39, 95
- Taylor, O. E., 31
- Taylor, W., 152
- Ten Mile Creek, 104
- Texas in 1821–36, Political Organizations, 11
- Texas Veterans from Grimes County, 215–216
- Thomas, J., 62
- Thomas, John, 93
- Thomas, John B., 22
- Thomas, Mary, 93
- Thrall's History, 79
- Tidwell Campaign, 119
- Tinnonville, 42
- Townsend, William, 145–146
- Trast, David, 23 *footnote*
- Travis, Captain Patrick, 94 *footnote*
- Treadwell, John, 106 *footnote*
- Treasurers of Grimes County, 204–205
- Trespacios, Jose Felix, 11
- Tucker, Lou, 72
- Tucker, Dr., 72
- Tucker, Sallie, 72
- Vasquez Invasion 1841, 179
- Viesca, 21, 54, 73, 82, 95
- Vince, Allen, 147
- Walker, Amanda, 151
- Walker, Buck, 118
- Walker, Daniel, 151–152
- Walker, Elizabeth, 151–152
- Walker, Emma, 152
- Walker, General, 124
- Walker, Helen, 117
- Walker, John C., 151
- Walker, John Grimes, 152
- Walker, Mary, 147
- Walker, Mary Jane, 151
- Walker, Sarah, 151
- Walker's Prairie, 150
- Walker, Tandy, 45, 147–153
- Walkerterson, J. F. Q., 23 *footnote*
- Wallace, Caleb, 77 *footnote*, 154
- Wallace, James, 155
- Wallace, Patsy, 155
- Waller, Anna, 84
- Waller County created, 31
- Waller, Judge Edwin Leonard, 84
- Waller, Leonard, 84
- Waller, Mary, 84
- Washington Municipality erected into county, 25
- Washington Municipality, origin and organization, 21
- Weaver, Mrs. Etta, 147 *footnote*
- West, Dan (colored), 81 *footnote*
- West, R. M., 81 *footnote*
- Wesson, Mrs. F. B., 38 *footnote*
- Wharton, "Betsy," 88
- Wharton, John Austin, 78, 90
- Wharton, William H., 83, 87, 90
- Wheatless Movement, World War, 170 *footnote*, 217–239
- Wheelock, 42, 156
- White, Bethia, 155
- White, Dudley J., 155–157
- White, Elendor, 165
- White, James W., 155
- White, John P., 155
- White, Leander, 155
- White Man's Union, 197, *footnote*
- White, Mariah L., 155
- White, Miriam, 155
- White, Pinkney, 156
- White, Walter, 156
- Whitesides, Acye Hoxey, 159
- Whitesides, Boland, 77 *footnote*
- Whitesides, Bolen, 158
- Whitesides, Boone, 158
- Whitesides, Elizabeth, 162
- Whitesides, Franklin Terry, 159
- Whitesides Henry, 158
- Whitesides, James, 22, 77, 157–161
- Whitesides, James Ashford, 159
- Whitesides, James Bingham, 159
- Whitesides, Mrs. James B., 157 *footnote*
- Whitesides, John F. Crawford, 159

- Whitesides, John Tilford, 159
Whitesides, John J., 161
Whitesides, Mary Terry, 159
Wier, Mrs. Clarence, 161
Wilkinson, J. G., 22
Winder, John and Ann, 72
Winkler, E. W., 123
Williams, Elizabeth, 141
Williams, H. J., 96
Williams, W. W., 129, *footnote*
Williamson, H. J., 23 *footnote*, 24
Wilson, Mrs. A. H., 137 *footnote*
Wilson, John and Mary, 99 *footnote*
Wilson, H. H., 99 *footnote*
Wilson, Hamer, 38
Womack, A. M., 120
Wood, J. H., 23 *footnote*
Wood, Mrs. Josephine, 160
Wood, Mary, 161
Woolsey, John, 57
Wynche, John J., 22
Yeamans, Asa, 162
Yeamans, Caleb S., 162
Yeamans, Daniel, 162
Yeamans, Esther, 162
Yeamans, Mrs. E. M., 163
Yeamans, Horace, 162
Yeamans, Jerusha, 162
Yeamans, Joseph, 162
Yeamans, Mary, 162
Young, Chester J., 23 *footnote*
Zuber, Alexander, 24
Zuber, Abraham, 163-171
Zuber, *Ancestry and Kindred*, 169
Zuber, Daniel, 164-165, 169
Zuber, *Eighty Years in Texas*, 169
Zuber, Emanuel, 165
Zuber, Jacob, 165
Zuber, James Andrew, 169
Zuber, John, 165
Zuber, Joshua, 165
Zuber, Mary, 165
Zuber, Mary Ann Deshazo, 168
Zuber, *Memories of*, 169
Zuber, Rachel Zerena, 169
Zuber, Wm. P., 36, 43, 80, 106, 164,
168

Tip

Errata



On pages 196, 197 and 198 the columns headed "County Clerks" and "County Judges" are transposed. The names of the County Judges appear in the second column and the names of the County Clerks are in the third column.

THE PUBLISHER.